Billionaire’s Intense Love

S.S.Sahoo

STORYPDF

Complete English text · US Letter reading edition

Contents

Introduction	8
Prologue	9
Chapter 1	11
Chapter 2	14
Chapter 3	17
Chapter 4	20
Chapter 5	24
Chapter 6	27
Chapter 7	30
Chapter 8	34
Chapter 9	37
Chapter 10	40
Chapter 10	43
Chapter 11	45
Chapter 12	48
Chapter 13	51
Chapter 14	54
Chapter 15	57
Chapter 16	61
Chapter 17	65
Chapter 18	69

Chapter 19 72

Chapter 20 75

Chapter 21 77

Chapter 22 81

Chapter 23 83

Chapter 24 86

Chapter 25 90

Chapter 26 93

Chapter 27 98

Chapter 28 103

Chapter 29 107

Chapter 30 110

Chapter 31 113

Chapter 32 117

Chapter 33 119

Chapter 34 123

Chapter 35 128

Chapter 36 133

Chapter 37 136

Chapter 38 139

Chapter 39 142

Chapter 40 146

Chapter 41 149

Chapter 42 154

Chapter 43 157

Chapter 44 160

Chapter 45 162

Chapter 46 165

Chapter 47 169

Chapter 48 171

Chapter 49 174

Chapter 50 178

Chapter 51 180

Chapter 52 183

Chapter 53 185

Chapter 54 189

Chapter 55 192

Chapter 56 195

Chapter 57 199

Chapter 58 203

Chapter 59 207

Chapter 60 211

Chapter 61 214

Chapter 62 216

Chapter 63 219

Chapter 64 221

Chapter 65 224

Chapter 66 228

Chapter 67 230

Chapter 68 235

Chapter 69 236

Chapter 70 241

Chapter 71 246

Chapter 72 249

Chapter 73 253

Chapter 74 258

Chapter 75 262

Chapter 76 265

Chapter 77 269

Chapter 78 273

Chapter 79 277

Chapter 80 280

Chapter 81 284

Chapter 82 287

Chapter 83 290

Chapter 84 294

Chapter 85 296

Chapter 85 300

Chapter 86 303

Chapter 87 306

Chapter 88 311

Chapter 89 314

Chapter 90 318

Chapter 91 321

Chapter 92 324

Chapter 93 329

Chapter 94 332

Chapter 95 339

Chapter 96 343

Chapter 97 346

Chapter 98 350

Chapter 99 354

Chapter 100 358

About this edition

This StoryPDF reading edition contains the complete English text, with its original paragraph and section order preserved.

Newly typeset with selectable text, a linked contents section and chapter bookmarks. Copyright rules can differ by country. Corrections and rights enquiries: liuxinglianxue@gmail.com.

Read online: StoryPDF / Billionaire's Intense Love.

Reading edition: 2026-10-29. Typography: Crimson Text (SIL Open Font License).

Introduction

Billionaire's Intense Love

Prologue

"And where do you think you are going?" he asked as he stood right before me, blocking my way to the exit.

"Xavier, I have work to do...please move," I said and tried to walk past him, but he had some other things in his mind as he took a step closer to me and looked into my eyes. My breath hitched by his close proximity. I looked down purposely trying to control my breaths, not wanting him to know he affected me.

"Wh-What are you doing?" I asked but cursed in my mind when I stuttered a little.

As if he heard my thoughts he chuckled and that made me look up at him. His eyes had this mischievous glint that made me nervous all of a sudden because I knew him...very well. He would go up to any extent to annoy me and there is no escape to his mischievous tricks. That is why what I want to avoid being caught up from his tricks.

Pursing my lips up I took a side step with the intention of walking past him but again he stood in front of me blocking my way. Avoiding his boyish grin, I clicked my tongue at his behavior and took another side step, but again he mimicked my movement and finally, after two further unsuccessful attempts, I gave up, in the end glaring at him while he grinned.

"Xavier, what do you think you are doing?" I asked and smiled at Lucas, my brother, who walked past my room.

"What am I doing?" he questioned, playing innocent.

"Really?," I huffed at him and tried again but once again he blocked my way and this time he even chuckled at my effort.

"Xavier!" Crossing my arms across my chest and lifting my chin up, I tried my best to give him an annoyed and angry expression, but all he did in return was to shove his hands inside his pant pockets and gave me a shrug.

"I am not even touching you," he said in a taunting manner, giving me a contagious smile.

"But you are blocking my way! Will you please move now?," I asked as politely as I could.

"Oh, am I? I'm so sorry." He shook his head and took a step to his side, giving me a space to walk out of the room. Him letting me pass so easily made me a little doubtful of his actions. He stood there smiling at me, but I shrugged the thoughts aside as I took a step forward. A squeal escaped my

mouth when he encircled his hands around my torso and swept me up from the ground, pressing me to his body.

"Xavier!" I groaned as I tried to free myself from his grip.

"Angela," he said. I stopped wiggling against him when he leaned closer and whispered into my ear, "In order to know me. . ."He chuckled deeply and a shiver ran down my spine when his warm breath fanned on the side of my cheek. "You have a long way to go. " And with that he pecked my cheek and looked back at me, winking as he removed his arm, and with a satisfied grin, he walked out of the room.

Chapter 1

Angela

"Macey, where are you?" Macey was my one-year-old black Persian cat, who was now sitting on top of my wardrobe and staring down at me curiously.

"C'mon kitty, get down here and eat your food. "

She meowed and jumped down into my arms as I headed towards the kitchen before serving her cat food to her so that I could get ready.

Living in Manhattan, New York wasn't easy for me. Even with a Bachelors in engineering, I have still managed to remain jobless. But I was lucky enough to share an apartment with my childhood best friend, Emily Lockwood. Emily was somewhat of a legend is the only person to break down the walls of yours truly, Angela Carson.

Speaking of Emily, nowadays I often help her in her flower shop. Yup, a flower shop. I've been questioned on this since I have my degree in mechanics, but thanks to my overprotective and extremely possessive brothers, who don't believe I should be working after what happened with me in my previous company, I find this impossibility. I'm not surprised since they've never allowed me to work, but then this incident had to happen to me.

Ever since our mom died when I was 15, they've kept me securely under their wings, pampering and spoiling me. Nowadays they pay my rent as well as give me a monthly allowance, much to my annoyance. Our father runs his own restaurant in Chicago, and they went into business with him when they finished school. They just couldn't leave him on his own after Mom died. With Lucas being twenty-six and Danny being twenty-five, they were old enough to take over from our father, Matthew Carson.

Living in Chicago all my life, I needed a breath of fresh air. So when Em decided to move to the Big Apple, I joined her, much to their disapproval. I needed my independence, but the only way to appease them was if I agreed to work not as an employee and instead with Em in her flower shop. That was a lie of course—I have started my job hunt and I am pretty sure I will get a job in no time.

Yes, one could say this is a unique choice to make, but I can ensure that I'll not be working with Em for the rest of my life. Yes, I do have priorities. Heck, everyone has priorities in their lives. And in order to be more independent I have decided to finally go against my family's absurd choice of not wanting me to work just because of a silly incident.

The sound of my phone ringing snapped me back to reality and I checked my phone to see five missed calls from Emily. I inhaled seeing her message asking me to be there by ten. I checked the time to find it's already nine-thirty in the morning. So, not bothering to waste any more time, I hurried myself to get ready and reach her before the time.

I threw on my white floral knee-length dress before slipping on my gladiators. I had enough time to quickly do a braid, letting it fall to the side leaving no time for me to do my makeup. I took my phone and locked my apartment but not before checking on my cat. I saw her jumping onto my mattress and snuggling into the pillow. A small smile appeared on my face and I hurried to lock my apartment door before racing down the street to Emily's shop. Taking long strides, I tried to walk as quickly as I could to her shop. I saw George sitting with his black Labrador reading the newspaper on the bench. He was an old man who would come every day in the morning with his black Labrador for a walk and since I walk every day to Em's shop I meet him daily and I wave at him to which he replied by smiling and waving back at me while his dog barked swinging its tail happily seeing me.

Finally, I reached the shop and found her working the shop's accounts. She was completely submerged into her work she didn't notice me.

"You are late," she said without sparing me a glance.

"I know and I'm sorry," I said, sagging my shoulders with resignation at being caught.

She exhaled loudly and looked at me.

"Angie, how many times have I told you not to worry so much and just relax?," she asked , throwing me a smile.

I gave her a simple smile as a reply.

Moving towards one of the shelves, I heard Emily call out to me, "Angie, will you arrange those white lilies? They're on that shelf in the corner and if you need more the gardens full."

I nodded as I began to arrange them.

As I reached out for the bunch I was stopped by a hand wearing a Rolex reaching for the flowers at the same time as I was. I looked at the owner of the hand and saw a mid-50-year-old man wearing a business suit with blonde hair and warm green eyes. He was still handsome for his age and even with his 6"2 height he still had this kind aura around him. As I retreated back, I noticed the warm smile that sat on his face, trying desperately to mask the depression in his eyes. The sadness that bore out of them made me want to console him and ask him the reason for his sadness.

"Excuse me, young lady, can I have those lilies? I really want them for someone special. I fear those are the last in the shop."His soft warm voice was tinged with kindness.

Chapter 2

"But didn't you find his face a little familiar?," she asked .

Raising an eyebrow, I turned around to face her… "Hmm?"

"I don't know why, but… oh, will you please place them on there?" She pointed the bouquet of flowers near me. I nodded and placed the bouquet on the top shelf.

"Sometimes I am really envious of your height,," she muttered.

I looked back at her, chuckling. ."Really?," I laughed. .

"Ever thought of a modeling career?," she asked and, pursing my lips, I shook my head.

"Modeling is just not my forte. ," I went back to the counter and sat on the small chair while she stood before me rolling ribbons on the roses.

"Oh, c'mon, you have the height, the looks… I'm positive you will be successful if you try. "She wiggled her eyebrows at me and I just shrugged my shoulders and gave her a lopsided grin.

"I have a job interview tomorrow. ," I grinned.

She stopped her work and turned back towards me."Really?" All of a sudden she looked excited.

"Why are you excited? Are you in a hurry to get rid of me?"

"Oh, shut up, Angie. You know that's not the case. I am actually happy that you are finally moving on from that incident," she said and I nodded, smiling at her.

"If it wasn't for that pervert of a boss you would have still been working and perhaps you would've been somewhere else enjoying your life," she said as memories of my former boss came flooding back to my mind.

I was forced to place my resignation on his table because I was tired of the harassment I faced in his company. Even though he was married and had a kid, he still had his eye on me and harassed me sexually at times, like touching my butt whenever I was alone, sending me inappropriate text messages, trying to invade my personal space and once he even dared to kiss me forcibly until I slapped him and decided it was enough for me tolerate any further and decided to resign. But Emily being Emily, she told my family and even forwarded his perverted text messages to his wife.

It was then when my family decided that I don't need to work any longer. In fact, they wanted me to join them in our family business. But I couldn't. .I was keen on starting a fresh. So after that I worked in a garage with my friend until Emily called me to her to Manhattan.

"What is the name of the company anyway?," she asked , breaking my thoughts.

"It's Dox Aerospace. "

"Woah, that's a big one. Best of luck. I know you will get it through with your interview. "

"Thanks. ," I

"And maybe you will find your prince charming there. "

"Em, please," I mumbled embarrassed. At the age of twenty-four I was still single. It was only because of me being a tomboy in my school that none of the guys showed interest, and then it was because I was a workaholic. I concentrated more into my studies and believed that I would always end up in troubles if I had any relationship…it was what my brothers and my dad taught me.

"Want me to set you up on a blind date?" She wiggled her eyebrows.

"Welcome Ma'am," I greeted the middle-aged woman who just nodded and smiled in return.

"White roses please," she said and I nodded, gesturing Emily to bring her the bouquet she was already holding.

The lady smiled in appreciation.

. "They say white roses are a fitting way to honor a friend or loved one in recognition of a new beginning or a farewell," I said, and the woman nodded in agreement.

"It's for my daughter. She has a job interview today. It's for luck," she said as she handed me the money.

"Have a good day," we both said in unison as the lady walked out of the shop with the flowers in her hand.

Looking her love for her daughter reminded me of my mother. I believe if she was alive she would have been my strength and she would've definitely helped me to get back on my feet, unlike my brothers who had covered me with their wings in the name of protection and tied down mine, disabling me from flying. Sometimes it was hard for me not to think of how my life would've been if Mom was here. I miss her.

"Here is a rose for your luck." Emily presented a white rose before me, breaking our silence.

"I know and I believe in you. You will definitely get that job."

I took the rose from her and inhaled its scent. The sad emotions that were climbing up me a few minutes ago disappeared and were replaced with light and happy ones.

"You are the best." I opened my arms to hug her and, chuckling, she hugged me.

"I know."

"What was he saying?," she asked as I squatted down and began to pluck the lilies and some white roses.

"I don't know. First, he mistook for me as a customer, but as I handed him the flowers he said I am kind and he hopes we meet soon," I replied as I stood up, the flowers in my hand, and I walked back into the shop.

"Strange man," I heard her laughing a little.

With this, he smiled at me one last time before paying for the flowers and quickly nodding goodbye. Then he was gone, leaving me completely and utterly confused.

"Who was he?" Em asked me curiously from the counter.

I just shrugged my shoulders in reply and headed out to the garden for more lilies with Emily following me.

Shock overtook me for a moment as I realized he thought I was a customer. I smiled and cleared his misunderstanding about me being a customer before bringing them up. I then neatly bunched them together before tying some tissue paper and ribbon around them and handing them back.

He smiled widely at this before taking the flowers from me. As he was leaving he unexpectedly turned back to me and said, "Not only are you beautiful but you're also a kind-hearted soul that I hope to meet again soon."

Chapter 3

Brad

I called my PA to my office, sighing loudly in frustration. Not even a minute later there was a knock at my door.

"Come in," I called without looking up. In walked Ron, my twenty-six year old PA.

"Did you find him, Ron?," I questioned with one eyebrow raised. Today was not the day to mess with me. He gulped audibly before hesitantly shaking his head. I could see the nerves on him as he began to stutter.

"Sir, we tried to trace him down but we weren't able to because his phone was switched off."

I took a deep breath, trying to calm my anger before ordering Ron to leave. He nodded before leaving. He knew that right now was not an appropriate time to call upon a conversation.

Sighing, I walked over to my window looking down the forty-eighth floor from which my office stood. As usual, the street was bustling with activity. Unlike them, I wasn't blessed with the normality that they went through on a day to day basis. I was the Brad Knights,. a billionaire and oil tycoon with my own chain of hotels. At the age of sixty, I was well established and proud of the empire I had built from scratch. There was a misconception that I was born with a silver spoon in my mouth, but this was not the case. I did not come from money; my father was an ordinary mechanic who went above and beyond his working hours in order to put me through school. My gratitude towards my father is unfathomable. Today, people know and respect me for a good reason. And it's all because of my father's hard work.

Seeing my company grow and flourish was like watching your child. Having built it from scratch, there was no greater pride. I was now ready to step down though I was hesitant to hand over my position to my son, Xavier Knights. He was one in a million with his intellect and talent. He was also gifted with good looks. Good looks that had all the ladies swooning and falling at his feet. This worked to his detriment for he grew to be arrogant and rude. Much to my dismay, he turned out to be the biggest playboy who refused to settle down. As much I would have like to, I couldn't blame him. Ever since that girl came into his life, leaving him broken and disheartened,. he was never the same again..

We began to argue about him settling down, and the next thing I knew he had left to some foreign place, while blocking me out completely. He hadn't even told me he was leaving. One day I woke up to find a message stating he'd be back soon as he needed some space and time to think.

I didn't know what to do. I wasn't getting any younger and I needed someone to hand the company over to. I was completely stuck. As much as I would like to trust my son, he wasn't showing any responsibility. He was an adult for heaven's sakes. I wish my wife, Amelia, was here; she'd know exactly what to do and how to talk to him.

I miss my Amelia, the love of my life, t. he mother of my child, and the reason for my success. She was my support. Unfortunately, she passed away four years ago, taking my heart with her. Every time I feel in doubt, I think of her and I'm immediately filled with hope. The day I lost her was the most devastating day of my life that was also the day I lost a part of myself.

I was overcome with nostalgia and sorrow before deciding to visit her grave, which was something I hadn't done in a long time. I ordered my driver to bring out the car before ordering Ron to reschedule all my meetings for tomorrow. I made a note to stop at a flower shop to buy white lilies since they were her favorite flowers.

The car soon came to a halt outside a homely looking flower shop named The Blossom. As I entered I headed over to the counter and asked the girl to point me in the direction of the lilies. She pointed towards a shelf in the corner where a young girl was already standing holding a bunch. Seeing those were the last ones and thinking she must be a customer, I panicked. Before she could turn and leave, I headed over and reached towards them. She turned towards me in shock before slowly regaining her composure. I was in awe, completely taken aback by her beauty. She had an aura of kindness and love that resonated from her. I immediately felt a connection. I was overcome by a fatherly love and affection towards her.

Finding my voice, I cleared my throat.

"Excuse me. I'm sorry but those appear to be the last white lilies. I'd really like them as I need them for someone special. "

She smiled a warm, heart-stopping smile before clearing the confusion. She was not a customer but rather an employee there at The Blossom. She gave a light-hearted laugh before calling me over and wrapping them up beautifully before handing them to me. I smiled down at the beautiful flowers before paying.

I felt happiness as I thought about the girl. Her pure and delicate presence reminded me of Amelia. That thought brought peace to me and for the first time in the four years I felt complete and utter happiness.

I reached Amelia's grave, bending down to dust away from the fallen leaves before slowly placing the flowers before her headstone.

. . . . Amelia Knights Beloved wife of Brad Knights and loving mother to Xavier Knights. Born 16 October 1962 - Died 4 March 2011

As I sat near her grave and reminisced on our youth days, I began speaking to her about Xavier in hopes she'd show me some sort of sign. With heavy eyelids, I momentarily closed my eyes, my mind immediately going to the beautiful girl in the flower shop. I smiled, looking towards Amelia's grave. My love has given me the answer. I pictured Amelia accepting the girl with open arms. I jumped with joy as I promised Amelia the next time I visited her it would be because I bore good news. I would save our son. I would give him the perfect girl—a girl that was just like his mother.

. When I returned to the office, I passed Ron and told him to get any information he could on the girl from the flower shop. Entering my office, I smiled. .Everything would work out soon. My son would have his princess.

Chapter 4

Angela

It all started a month ago. …

It was late in the evening when I sat beside Em on the couch, watching my favorite TV show, when the phone rang. I looked at the caller ID and saw that it was my brother, Lucas.

"Hello, Lucas?"

"Angie, th-...there's a problem," Lucas replied.

"Problem? What is it? Is everything alright?"

"Calm down, Angie. It's Dad. "

"Dad! What's wrong with Dad? Is he alright?"

"Angie, stay calm and listen to me. Dad, he fainted. We weren't with him when it happened. He was walking out of the house when our neighbor saw him and called 911. I was informed and immediately rushed to his side. The doctors are checking him out as he still hasn't gained consciousness. Danny was also out of town but is on his way—he will be reaching the hospital soon. Angie, can you come here?"

"Oh, my god!," I panicked."Lucas, don't worry, I'm taking the first flight out of here. I'll be there soon. You, please stay with Dad and keep updating me about his condition. I'll call you as soon as I land. "

He sighed and replied, "Okay, come soon. I will be taking care of Dad. Bye."And with that, he hung up.

"Bye," I muttered, more to myself than him.

I looked at Em. She was busy typing on her laptop.

"Em, what are you doing?," I peeked at the laptop screen.

"Booking tickets, duh! I heard your conversation. "

"Thanks, Em," I replied gratefully.

"You're welcome. Now go and quickly pack your bags. You only have two hours to catch your flight and I have already called a cab," she replied, smiling.

"Oh, Em, Thank you, Thank you so very much! You are the best!"

I ran towards her, giving her a hug.

The cab arrived an hour later. . I was late because of the traffic and I was running to catch my flight when I crashed into someone.

"Oh, God, I'm so sorry!" I apologized quickly and dashed towards my plane, without bothering to look at the person.. . Thankfully, I made it to my plane on time. I inhaled deeply and took my seat, waiting for the landing. Two hours later, I rushed through the checkout and hired a taxi to get to the hospital..

Entering Dad's room, I was devastated. He laid unconscious on the hospital bed, with IV tubes attached to his hands and chest. He was breathing through an oxygen mask. He looked so vulnerable and weak. Tears rolled down my face.

Lucas was sitting beside him, leaning on a chair and looking worried and exhausted. I slowly walked to him and placed my hand on his shoulder. He looked up at me, smiled, and pulled me into a hug.

"Oh, Angie, you're here!" he cried.

I patted his back, reassuring him, and myself, that everything would be okay.

"Lucas, what happened? What did the Doctor say?"

"Angie, let's get out of here. I don't want Dad to hear this. "

I nodded and went to Dad, giving him a kiss on his forehead before walking out of his room with Lucas.

"Listen to me, Angie, just don't panic after hearing this, alright? It's not good news. ."

I nodded.

"Dad. . ." He inhaled deeply and continued."His heart is failing him. "

I couldn't believe what I was hearing.

"What! What the hell are you saying?" My voice came out in a whisper and soon I was crying, sobbing, unable to withstand the pain this news held.

Lucas hugged me and soon I could feel my right shoulder was damp because of his tears. I controlled myself and asked. . ,."How? ... . He was perfectly fine! I mean, I don't understand…"

"Neither do I, Angie. The doctors said that he needs a ventricular assist device or artificial heart to support circulation and this surgery should be done as soon as possible if we want his condition to get better. "

Hope arose within me. Helping Dad getting better was my first priority now.

"So what are we waiting for, Lucas?"

"I'll tell you what we're waiting for, Angie," someone said from behind me.

I turned to find Danny, who looked sorrowful but was trying to appear strong with his determined face.

"Danny!," I cried and ran into his open arms to hug him. He wrapped his hands around me and patted my back. I pulled back and dragged him to the bench where we were previously sitting and asked him, "What is it, Danny?"

"Sis, we're bankrupt," Danny replied in a single breath.

"What? I mean, how? We were stable, right?"

"Our restaurant hasn't been doing great lately. So… Dad loaned some money from the bank in the hope that we'd be able to repay it. But fate worked against us, and now we are bankrupt. Dad didn't want you to worry you so we kept it from you. "

Danny averted his gaze. I put my head on his shoulder and unshed tears began rolled down my cheeks again. I felt so hopeless. Lucas was patting my thigh when we heard some loud beeping noises from Dad's room. We rushed inside and were terrified. Soon doctors and nurses rushed into the room and we were pushed outside. I couldn't stop crying. Lucas comforted me while Danny was crying his eyes out.

After a while, a doctor approached us."Don't worry, that was a minor attack. But we were successful in saving him. We need to perform his heart transplant as soon as possible. ". .

Danny and Lucas went inside the room to check on Dad. I stood there for a while, not knowing what to do, and soon found myself walking out of the hospital. My legs were working on their own and I didn't know where I was headed. Soon I stopped in my track and looked around finding myself in a park where children were playing happily. I sat on a bench and looked at the happy and careless children. Children who were carefree of the world and its problems. I remember how Dad used to bring Danny, Lucas, and me to the park on weekends. Reminiscing about the past brought a smile to my lips, but soon Dad's condition flashed before my eyes and I began crying and sobbing, feeling helpless again. I sensed a presence beside me on the bench and turned to find the familiar

face of an old man. I instantly remembered where I saw him. .He looked at me kindly and smiled. I smiled back with my still teary eyes.

Chapter 5

"I was passing by when I decided to take walk in the park where I found a beautiful woman crying," he said to me in a fatherly tone.

He asked me whether he was disturbing me, to which I shook my head.

He smiled and asked, "May I know the reason why a kind woman like you is sitting alone in this park and crying?"

I just stared at him, not knowing what to say. He sensed my discomfort and tried to lighten my mood by asking, "Oh, I see, boyfriend problem?"

I shook my head and smiled. I don't know why I had this sudden urge to tell him everything and cry out loud, but I did what I felt like anyways. I told him everything that happened with my family, from my Dad's health to our financial condition. By the time I finished I was sobbing and weeping.

"Oh, I see the problem, young lady,." He replied with sympathetic eyes.

We sat quietly for some minutes, just looking at the children playing in the sand.

"If you want, then I can help you, young lady."He spoke suddenly from beside me.

I turned to look at him and saw that he was already staring at me with a stoic expression. I gave him a questioning look.

"I can help you in everything, from your family's financial condition to your father's heart transplant," he said in an authoritative tone. His playful and kind demeanor was replaced with cold and business one as if he was discussing a business deal.

"If you know who Brad Knights is, he is sitting right beside you at this very moment," he said, gazing at the sky. My eyes widened. Of course, I knew who Brad Knights was. He was the richest and most powerful man in New York, probably of our country but he kept a low profile so most of the people couldn't recognize him. I was having a hard time believing that he was sitting right beside me and was offering me his help.

"Oh, no! No, Mr. Knights, your help's not needed."

"I am sure, child, that after listening to your story I know that you surely need my help", he replied, kindness flowing from his eyes again.

I think God heard my prayers and sent Mr. Knights to help me. Happy tears fell down my cheeks.

"Thank you, Thank you so much, I will do anything to see my dad get better, and I will repay you as soon as possible,," I replied truthfully.

"Repay me? Oh no, child, I don't want you to return my money."He looked at me.

I gave him a questioning look. He smiled and stood up. .

"You don't have to return my money, dear, but you will have to do something in return. "

I nodded. "What will I have to do?"

He smiled and simply said, "Marry my son. "

***

For the third time, I gazed at myself in the mirror. .

Still, can't believe I said Yes to Mr. Knights.

I didn't say yes immediately, though.

That day he gave me his card and personal number and went away.

I went back to the hospital and after two days of thinking, again and again, I told everything about it to my brothers.

They didn't like the idea of me getting married in exchange for money to a stranger neither was I ready to marry a stranger for money. I was keen on waiting for any kind of other source of receiving money. I was hoping that the job interview I gave few days ago select me and but then time was running and again when Dad again had a minor attack my brothers grew vulnerable to the proposal of Mr. Brad and finally changed their mind.

I waited few days more but then I received no phone call from the company for which I had previously interviewed. Dad's condition was getting worse than I had expected and finally like my brothers I nodded at the proposal. Reluctantly…

Mr. Knights was overwhelmed when he heard my decision and immediately gave me a cheque and told me that I am to be married to his son in a month, after my father's surgery. He even set up a press conference where I was introduced to the media as his soon going to be daughter-in-law but then something was off. His son didn't show up in the conference and a reason was kept before the media that he was away from the country because of business but he would give an interview to the media as soon as he returns back. At this time of my life I was actually relieved that I didn't meet his son but then I believed blindly that it was all happening because of his consent. He must've agreed to go with his father's decision because like me he was also going to marry a

complete stranger. Still, it was nagging me why his father wanted his son to marry a woman like me when he could've any woman he wished for.

Em came to know about all this through the media and I had to tell her everything. She wasn't happy with what she heard but eventually gave up and wished me a bright future.

In one week Dad's surgery was held, which was a success. Our loan was paid and our restaurant was saved.

When Dad first opened his eyes the happiness I felt was unexplainable. Dad was weak at first, but with time he grew better and eventually he wanted to know how we saved him. After finding out exactly what I did for him, he cried and forbid me to marry.

I made him understand that a promise was a promise.

Mr. Knights kept his promise to help in our misery, so now it was my turn to keep my promise. In the end, Dad had to agree.

. . . . At the third week, Em came to Chicago and showed me the picture of my would-be husband, whom I still haven't met or even talked to.

He looked very handsome. Words couldn't explain his personality, and the headlines about him didn't convince me that he would be a good husband.

Chapter 6

I had never loved anyone romantically, but I knew someday I had to get married to someone. Even though I was more into studies and career but the couples I saw in the corner of the library, in the park, in the restaurant made me feel kind empty and lonely. Like every woman, I also had this wish to find a perfect man who would love and support me for which I kept on believing that one day I would eventually find the right guy and then I would marry him.

Talking about my unseen would-be …I still don't know about him nor do I hear from him…It's strange, but I know one thing: his father, Mr. Knight, helped me in my bad times, so now I had to repay him back by being a good wife to his son and a good daughter-in-law.

My future husband's name is Xavier Knights, and I am soon going to be a Knights too.

I will have to do my part of serving in this marriage with full sincerity and patience, and I will do it.

Mr. Knights informed me that I'll be meeting Mr. Xavier directly on the wedding day. As I had asked about him earlier, he told me that he is still out of the country and he agreed to the marriage which makes me wonder why did he even agree to marry me? Does he know me?

Impossible…

How am I going to react to him when I see him?

Calm down, calm down.

I heard the sound of door opening and looked behind to find Em standing and looking at me in awe.

"Angie, you look so beautiful. I can't believe that you are going to get married," she whispered through teary eyes.

Em knows everything about the marriage, and I know she is not showing she is really in pain.

I ran towards her and hugged her tight.

We just stood there hugging each other for some minutes and pulled away.

"Angie, remember one thing—wherever you go I'll always be there for you, just give me a call whenever you want, okay?"

I nodded and smiled at her. She is more like an older sister to me than a friend.

"And I wish happiness for you, Angie."she whispered, and a tear slipped down her rosy cheek.

I hugged her and cried."I will miss you,."

"I will too, Angie, I will too." she whispered and hugged back.

"Come on now, I don't want people to think that I made the bride cry." she tried to joke.

I smiled and together we came out of the room only to be hugged tightly by my brothers and Dad.

Dad is looking better now and he is able to walk, but he still needs rest.

"We will miss you, Angie, look," they all said in unison.

"I will too. ," I smiled and hugged each of them.

Soon they all left, leaving me and Dad alone. He took hold of my hand and gave a squeeze. .

I looked up to him and smiled. He replied with a smile and led me towards the aisle.

Soon I could hear people cheering and music playing.

"Everything is going to be fine, love. Don't be nervous. You look just like your mother,."Dad whispered, feeling my nervousness.

I nodded and looked forward at my soon-to-be husband.

He was looking towards,. wearing a black suit, and his hair was pulled up neatly.

My God, he is so beautiful.

And I could only see him from behind.

Soon I was standing before him. Dad kissed my cheek and left. Xavier's gaze was focused on the priest.

What's wrong? Why isn't he looking towards me?

"Do you, Xavier Knights, take Angela Carson to be your lawfully wedded wife, to have and to hold, from this day forward, for better, for worse, in sickness and in health, until death does us apart?"

He closed his eyes and inhaled deeply. And then, again without looking my direction, said with a voice filled with venom, . "I do. ."

Then he was given the marriage license by the officiant to sign. He looked reluctant at first, but then he took and signed it.

"Do you, Angela Carson, take Xavier Knights to be your lawfully wedded husband, to have and to hold, from this day forward, for better, for worse, in sickness and in health, until death does us apart?"

I took a deep breath and turned my head to stare at the huge crowd. I could see my brothers, Em, Dad and even Mr. Knights smiling at me.

I turned my head towards my husband who still wasn't looking at me.

"I do," I whispered, and now it was my turn to sign the papers, which I did, and everyone began to clap and cheer loudly.

"You may now kiss the bride. "

My husband just closed his eyes and gave me a short peck on my cheek.

After the ceremony, I noticed during the reception my husband never looked towards me and didn't bother to even talk to me. When we were forced to dance with each other, he just took my hand and led me to the dance floor, twirled me a few times and left me standing alone.

My classmates teased me for my wedding night which made me tense up but thanks to Em who knew on what situation I agreed to marry off she handled the situation and finally shooed them off and supported me.

When it was time to go to my new home I hugged everyone and bid them goodbye and joined my husband in the limo..

Typing furiously on his laptop he had this void expression on his face and it was starting to nag me because he wasn't even looking my way nor did he try to talk.

I thought he had given his consent to his father for the wedding. So what's wrong?

The Limo came to a halt and the Chauffeur Opened the door for us.. My unhappy looking husband quickly scrambled out of the car and began to walk towards the door of a beautiful mansion.

I thought maybe he was tired or something.

Not knowing what to do, I also got out of the car and thanked the chauffeur who only smiled towards me.

I followed my husband towards the house and into the living room when he suddenly stopped, his back facing me.

"We need to talk." he said in a cold manner, sending shivers down my body.

Chapter 7

.... I stopped in my tracks and looked at his back, which was still facing me. This is the first time he spoke to me. And before I can reply anything he continued.

"I am not going to repeat this again, so listen very carefully. You are nothing to me, not now, not ever." he said all this so simply.

My eyes widened and I couldn't register his words in my mind.

What?

"I was technically forced to marry you and I don't give a shit why you agreed to marry me, even after getting my letter. This only means one thing: you are nothing but a gold digging bitch who doesn't have any self-respect or dignity. "

I couldn't stop the tears rolling down my cheeks.

"I may have married you, but you don't have any idea how much I hate you."His words were filled with venom.. "Enjoy this as much as you want, but remember this—you are never going to be my wife. I hate you so much that I don't even want to see your face. So you better stay away from me else the consequences will be not good. From today onwards, you can do whatever, but don't dare to interfere in my life. I will be transferring money to your account every month and don't expect anything else apart from this. We will be husband wife to the world but not inside this house." He took a step to leave but again stopped and said, "I'll be bringing my girlfriends here, and you can enjoy your own life, but don't let the world know about it."

With this, he walked out of the room leaving my life all shattered, breaking me down in pieces.

I couldn't believe what I heard. Tears began to blind my eyes, leaving me devastated. I was furious, broken, and alone.

"What?" I muttered as I clamped a hand on my mouth.

I thought he Mr. Knights, his father had ensured me earlier that he had his consent. But what is this that I am hearing now? What am I going to do now?

My father… he has just started to recover. How am I going to tell him all this?

What should I do?

I promised Mr. Knights that I would take care of his son but then I used to think that like me he is ready negotiate with the situation.

"What will I do now?" I found myself in a situation where I was completely circled by problems.

I can't even divorce him because I remember signing a contract when his father handed me the cheque and it was clearly written that if I ever file a divorce from my side then I would've to pay back the double amount of what he had lend me.

What will I do now?

My legs began to tremble and my hands were shaking. I fell down to the floor.

This is like a nightmare, the worst dream I ever had. .

Wait, he said that I married him after I got his letter. Which letter was he talking about? I never got any letter..

I felt a hand on my shoulder, which made to quickly wipe my tears and looked behind to find a middle-aged woman looking sympathetically at me.

"Madame, come here let me take you to your room." she said, holding my hands and pulling me up.

I nodded and followed her to where she took. Soon we were standing before a closed door, which she opened using a key.

"Madam, your luggage has been set in the closet and everything is already unpacked and if you need anything then please call me. "

I nodded, not finding my voice to speak.

"My name is Lucy. I'm the housekeeper as well as the caretaker. "

"Angela, my name is Angela. "

She smiled and said, "I think you should certainly take rest. ."

"Shall I bring dinner to your room, Ma'am?"

"No, I'm not hungry. "

She nodded."I understand," she said and left, closing the door behind her and leaving me all alone.

I went to the bed and curled into a ball still in my wedding dress. I took the pillow and put my face against it, crying and sobbing.

I didn't even realize when sleep overtook me and I slipped into darkness.

~

I woke up to the glare of the sun which was falling on my face through the windows.

I sat up in the bed and yawned, rubbing my eyes. Last night's incident played on my mind and I remembered everything that was not supposed to happen.

I looked around at the big room. Everything was white. This helped me to calm down a little because I loved white.

There was an LED TV right before my eyes and a shelf full of books was under it. A big lamp at the bed side, a big window with curtains opened and two sofas.

I was still wearing my wedding dress, which was completely ruined. I got off the bed and went towards the bathroom.

I looked at myself in the mirror to find a girl who looked tired, her golden locks were falling messily on her shoulder while her makeup was all smudged. Her blue eyes held sadness and pain and were puffy because of crying the whole night. That girl was me, Angela Carson. Or should I say Angela Knights. …

I got out of my dress and took a long warm shower to relax myself. Afterwards I washed my make-up and brushed my teeth. Wearing the bathrobe, I came out of the bathroom and went to the closet. I selected a brown baggy tee-shirt with long sleeves and and black slacks. I dried my hair, which was still wet, and went to sit on the sofa beside the window.

I began thinking about last night's incident. He said that he sent me a letter.

I didn't receive any letter.

I remembered the quote, "The greatest difference between two people is misunderstanding. "

. . So I quickly got up from the sofa and went out of my room.. I was walking down the hallways when I saw Lucy. Her face looked flushed and she looked quite frightened. She was holding a jug full of water and when she saw me her eyes widened and she quickly approached me.

"Good morning, Ma'am," she greeted hesitantly.

"Good morning, Lucy ,"

"You must be hungry. Come, I'll make you breakfast. ".

"No, Lucy, it's fine. I'll make my own breakfast. Can you tell me where Mr.. Knights room is?"

Her eyes widened and she looked towards the floor.

I noticed her expressions become sad and she looked sympathetically towards me.

"Madame, I think you shouldn't go to his room now," she replied in one breath.

"Why? Is he busy or something?," I asked, growing impatient.

"Yes, he is... No, I mean he is not. "

"Lucy, are you alright? What are you a saying?"

"Madame… take a left from this corridor and the second room to the right is his room," she replied quickly and ran away.

But I didn't miss her eyes looking watery.

Was she crying? Why? I hope I didn't hurt her or something.

I took the path as she instructed and soon reached the room. I took a deep breath and thought about how to start a conversation and clear his misunderstanding. Last night, I made up my mind that I would tell him everything and clear his misunderstanding. Judging from the way he reacted it was clear that he didn't have a single idea about me and I intended to let him know on what situation I agreed to marry and also about the contract that I had signed.

Chapter 8

I was ready to knock when I heard some noises coming out of his room.

What is this noise?

I tried to hear more clearly and heard what I shouldn't hear—the sounds of someone moaning.

Tears threatened to fall from my eyes.

It can't be possible.

Gaining courage, I held the door knob and turned it to open and only to find my husband and a red haired girl wrapped in sheets on the bed kissing each other hungrily.

I silently closed the door, not wanting to disturb their inhumane conversation, and simply walked towards my room.

From the corner of my eyes, I saw Lucy hiding behind the wall and was watching me with tears in her eyes.

At least someone was aware of my pain.

So this was the reason for her behavior before.

I closed the door of my room and went towards the bathroom.

I filled the tub with water and went inside it and switched on the shower.

The water was running down my face, and my clothes were completely soaked.

I couldn't control my emotions any longer because there was no one who would help me deal with the situation and I felt lonely.

~

It's been two days since that incident happened and I have been having nightmares about it. Mr. Knights never spoke to me or even tried to know about my conditions.

I have been told by Lucy that he joined his company and will be remaining busy. But I knew the other part of the story very well.

It is very hard for me to register everything that happened to me, but life isn't all chocolate and cakes. I can't just sit in this room, locking myself from the whole world till my life ends.

What will I get crying for something that was not meant for me from the beginning?

Life is all about giving yourself a chance.

So I wiped my tears that seemed to been flowing continuously from my eyes since the wedding night and went to the bathroom to clean myself up.

I looked like a mess.

I cleaned myself, dressed properly and went out of my room to find Lucy. I found her cleaning in the kitchen room, when she saw me her eyes beamed with happiness and she smiled.

Perhaps it was because I locked myself in my room for two days and denied to let anyone in or myself out.

"Ma'am are you alright?," she asked me worriedly.

"Please, Lucy, call me Angela. I'll be fine. ," I gave her a half-hearted smile."Lucy, what are you doing?"

"Mad—I mean, Angela, I'm going to make lunch, do you want something?"

"Oh, no, I'm here to say that I'm going outside for a walk, is it okay?," I asked nervously.

"Oh, yes sweetie, my bad, haha—I called you sweetie, my apologies,," she said nervously.

I reached for her hand and gave a soft squeeze."Lucy, you can call me sweetie. "

She smiled and said me to return back before evening. I nodded and went outside.

I need a walk to calm myself. It reminds me that I haven't gone out for running this whole week. I should start it tomorrow. It'll be a great distraction.

As I was walking lost in my thoughts I spotted a lovely café. I decided to give it a visit. Walking inside the cafe to be greeted by the ring of the bell sound that was attached by the door and the aroma of coffee.

I ordered myself a chocolate cupcake and a latte and went to take a seat beside the window.

I was thinking…how my life has changed just in a month. I didn't even notice when someone pulled the chair in front of me and sat on it.

I got out of my little world when someone cleared their throat.

I looked up to find a guy that my age but may be older than me by two to three years, smiling at me.

I kept my face stoic and simply stared at him. He was quite tall with brown eyes and had dirty blonde hair. He was attractive and was wearing a white shirt and I couldn't quite see what he was wearing in his bottom part since it was hidden under the table away from my view.

"Like what you see, sweetheart?" he asked.

I don't know why, but his behavior looked funny to me and I tried not to smile, giving him a fake glare.

I think he fell for it and sighed."I think I can never do this," he said in a monotone to which I only gave him a questioning look.

"Look miss, I'm gay" he suddenly blurted out, my eyes widened and I was sure my eyes were of the size of a saucer."Can you see that group of people behind me?"

I averted my gaze behind him to find a group of people trying to secretly look at us. Some were peeking through their cell phones while some were trying to act like they were having a casual conversation.

I nodded at the guy sitting in front of me."They're my friends and they challenged me to have a conversation with you and get your phone number. "

I found this very amusing but I didn't show him that.

Before he could continue, I said, "And you are doing this because you don't want them to know that you are gay, hmm?"

He looked surprised but murmured, "Smart lady. "

Chapter 9

I smiled at him and he laughed nervously, asking for my number.

I looked at him seriously and he again looked nervous.

I couldn't hold it anymore so I laughed so hard that everyone present in the cafe was looking at me. Oddly enough I didn't even had any idea why I was laughing. Was the situation really that funny or was it because I had no purpose to smile when I'm in that house.

I stopped laughing and said a quite sorry. He visibly relaxed before me and said giving me his hand to shake."Hi, I'm Dustin Sterling. "

"Hi, I'm Angela Ca-Knights." He looked at my fingers and gave me a surprised look."You are married?"

"Yeah, since two days. ' Memories flooded back to my mind and tried to cover it with a smile.

"Ooh, Congrats. I can see that we are going to be…good…friends, what do you think?" he sang and amused by his behavior I gave him a small nod.

We talked for a little longer and exchanged numbers. Then he left saying that he would call soon.

After I finished, I came out of the cafe only to find a bookstore beside the cafe.

I went inside it and brought myself some novels and magazines because I knew I had plenty of time read it.

I was walking back with my hands full of books when I saw an expensive car parked beside the road.

I saw that the hood of the car was open .I guess something was wrong with that car.

I stopped and looked around to find nobody. So I kept my books in a bench nearby and went to look at the engine.

I checked the engine and soon found the problem.

Oh, so the carburetor is the problem.

I think the engine of this car has been not started from a long time and that's why the fuel of the carburetor started to break down.

I saw the tool box beside the tire and I quickly took out what I needed: Phillips screwdriver, flat screwdriver, needle nose pliers, wire brush and socket set.

I took off the carburetor and turned off the fuel valve off on the tank and began my work. Shortly I had to remove the throttle slide from the cable and soon my work was done. Using the carb and choke cleaner that surprisingly present there I cleaned and fixed the carburetor in its place.

I guess the owner also knew that the problem was in the carburetor.

I had to check if the engine worked or not so I again looked to find no one around, so I looked inside the car to find the keys still attached to the ignition.

I started it and the car came to live roaring loudly.

I cleaned my hand using my handkerchief and turned to leave when somebody shouted.

"Hey, what are you doing there? I'm talking to you...Hey, wait!"

I didn't turn back to look who it was but the voice sounded familiar.

Very familiar. ..

I didn't quite remember whose voice it was because I took my books and ran.

Reaching my house, I went directly towards my room.

I took a shower to clean my sweat fuelled hands and wore my new fresh clothes and went down when it was time for dinner.

I saw Lucy setting plates on the table and I helped while ranting about the things I did today.

She just smiled and listened to me eagerly when I told her I fixed somebody's car. She was surprised to know I could do that.

I ate my Dinner and was just leaving for my room when Mr. Knights walked in.

Don't show me your face.

You don't have any Idea How much I hate you.

Never interfere in my life.

His words came barging into my mind and before I could anger him I got myself under the staircase where he couldn't see me.

He went to his room and got out off my hidden place and when I was in the middle of the staircase I heard sound of heels clicking behind me.

I turned back to look at a girl with raven hairs wearing high heels and in short pink dress running towards me more like Mr. Knights.

"Wait up Honey," she screeched.

When she went past me she just gave me a questioning look and I don't know why but also added a jealous look and ran clicking her heels to Mr. Knights' room.

I kept standing there for what seems like an hour and soon I heard some sounds of a girl giggling and moaning loudly.

I looked down the stairs to find Lucy watching me with her sad eyes.

I forced a smile on my face and dashed towards my bed room.

I switched off the lights and plunged an earphone and stuffed my face into the pillow trying to forget what I heard and what I saw.

Chapter 10

Life has been going on.

It's been three months since our marriage. Mr. Knights never spoke to me and I didn't have any hope that he will even speak to me.

Dustin and I seemed to grow a lot closer and he knows everything about my marriage. When he first learned about this he was like "Let me go and give your husband some piece of my mind to let him know what that stupid man is missing. "

I pleaded not to make things more complicated and at the end he gave up.

Lucy is like a mother to me which I never had. She loves me and takes care of me like her own daughter.

I have learned that Lucy is half-Italian and her daughter is staying with her husband in Italy. She visits them every end of the year on Christmas.

And about Mr. Knights, I stayed away from him as he has instructed me to do so. Though it is very disturbing to hear those noises coming from his room every night, I have grown acquainted with it.

Every day I see a new girl who always gave me a jealous look again…I don't know why but to this too I have grown acquainted off.

Mr. Brad Knights always seems to calls me and ask about my married life and more about his son. I had to lie him every time which I really didn't like but I had no choice when in reality I wanted to lash out on him for tricking me. But then, I had to shut my mouth thinking about my family who were still overcoming the financial issue and dad's health. I was thinking about ways to help my family and that began with co-operating with Mr. Brad's contract.

Em, Dad, and my brothers would call me once in a week to know about my whereabouts.

I am happy.

I think so.

I was glaring at the ceiling of my room when my alarm clock beeped. It was five o'clock in the morning and, yes, I always wake up before the alarm beeped.

I picked out my black short spandex and a pink tank top and my running shoes and held a water bottle. I plunged my earphones in my ear and went out my room.

It's a daily routine for me.

I came out of the mansion and began my jogging. At the middle of my jog, Dustin joined me.

"Hey Angie, good morning. "

"Hi, good morning to you too," I greeted back with a smile.

This has been our daily routine. We jogged for a good thirty minutes and stopped at the cafe where we first met. We ordered ourselves two coffees and went getting our cups back home sipping on it while talking.

When I came back home, I heard a female voice shouting.

"Baby, why are you sending me out of your house so soon. It's only eight a.m. ," a girl whined.

"Enough Priscilla, now get out of my house before I kick you out," shouted a very pissed male voice.

At least I'm not the only one at whom he shouts.

Before I can leave for my room, the girl came downstairs wearing only one heel and one in her hand. Her face was flushed and she looked embarrassed. She even wore her skirt in a wrong way and all her buttons of her shirt were opened or I guess were missing, how? I don't even want to know.

She looked at me with tears filled in her eyes and ran away, pushing me out of her way.

I felt very bad for her.

I realized that something has made Mr. Knights very pissed, which I don't want to deal with, so I did what every sane and scared girl would do normally in my place…

I ran towards my room.

I thought my room would save me from his scary self.

I reached my room and was just about to turn the doorknob to open when two big hands held me by my arms from my back and pushed me to faceplant directly on the door.

I squealed loudly and got scared because I wasn't able to see who it was but I bet I know who it might be.

"You—how dare you…" came an angry voice from behind me. No doubt it was Mr. Knights.

He was still holding me from my arms for which I wasn't able to see his face and I think he also wasn't able to see mine too.

"How dare you?" He shouted again making me flinch."You told Dad everything, didn't you?" He shouted, tightening his grip and making me whimper in pain.

It will surely leave a mark there.

"I thought giving you money would shut your mouth and you will leave me alone. But no, you had to open your mouth to Dad and told him everything," he shouted.

He pulled me to his hard chest and whispered in my ears, "Today Dad is going to give us a visit, and he never did so before so I'm assuming it's all your doing, isn't it? Remember, if he does confront me about you, then you will see how much power I told on your family so get ready," he said and pushed me very forcefully to the door, making me whimper in pain. I hit my left hand very hard on the door knob.

"Get ready within 2 hours. He'll be here by then," he said and left.

I slid down against the door and cried, putting my hands in my mouth so that no one could hear me but guess what I was wrong.

Lucy heard and I think saw everything because she was running towards me with a sympathetic look and hugged me.

"Oh, Angela, sweetie, are you alright?," she too cried, hugging me sitting on the floor.

I didn't reply anything but only cried hugging her tightly while resting my head on her chest.

I hoped she would lessen my pain.

Chapter 10

Everything was going perfectly fine. My one-night stands, fame, freedom, flings—everything—and soon I was going to be the owner of Dad's company. But no, Dad has to ruin it all…

When Dad called me from that private island I knew what he was going to discuss with me, so I thought I would handle it again as I did in the last time. But no, this time he was so desperate and determined for me to settle down that he kept a deal before me.

The deal was that I had to get married in a month or else he was going to pass down the company's responsibilities to none other than my stupid cousin brother

He is not worth it and Dad too knew that.

But I couldn't let that happen, so I agreed to his conditions. He beamed happily and hugged me, patting my back, and said, "Son, I have already found a perfect girl for you and you should meet her. She is just like your mother beautiful, pure and kind. "

I just stared at him. Anger began to surface within me but I controlled it.

Nobody can be like my mother.

Dad just doesn't understand that girls try to impress him by being fake to him and he falls for it.

But I'm not going to fall for it so easily. I did agree to this marriage, but I will show her, her place. I already started hating her, that's why I refused to meet her until the wedding.

On the wedding day, I thought of a plan to escape this all.

What if she refuses to marry me?

Then I could be free.

I remember when earlier I had asked dad to let me meet the woman that he chose but he simply refused and sent me out of the country for business. I tried to contact the woman straight up but then I found out about my dad watching my moves and I gave up but secretly planned an idea. The only day he allowed me to meet her was the wedding day itself. Even my phone was taken away from me in that stupid wedding day.

I didn't have anything to contact her so I went with the old style. I wrote her a letter.

I'm in love with someone else and you… please refuse to this marriage. I know that Dad has chosen you to be my wife, but I'm not worth it.

I wrote it and gave to a kid present there to give that letter to her. That kid did as he was told and soon he came back saying that he gave it to her.

I thought I have succeeded. I was standing at the altar smiling to myself that she won't show up but when the door opened and people started to cheer and all I knew that she was a gold digging bitch who came to marry me even after she got my letter.

Is there no dignity or pride left in this world?

My hatred grew so much for her that I started to see red. Not wanting to cause a scene, I simply glared to the front. She wants to marry me—fine! I'm going to make her life a living hell.

I hated her so much that if I would see her face I wouldn't be able to control myself and be violent on her. So I decided to never see her face. After the marriage I avoided her like a plague; when we were asked to dance I just took her hand and twirled her a few times and left her alone on the dance floor.

Being with her in the same car suffocated me. My friends told me that I was a lucky bastard who got a very beautiful wife. But I knew this very beautiful wife's ugly truth.

When we reached home I scrambled out of the car and went inside the house. I knew she was following me and the clicking of her heels annoyed me so I stopped and decided to end this all.

Still not facing, her I stopped in my tracks and snapped everything out of my heart to her. I knew she was staying few rooms away from me, which suffocated and disturbed me in a very bad way. I tried to sleep but I couldn't so I did what I wanted to do. I called Megan, a red-haired girl whom I met in a bar and called her to my house. She is beautiful, but definitely not my type.

Chapter 11

As soon as she came to my room, I pulled her inside my room, kissing her while literally tearing off her dress and throwing her in my bed. I gave her pleasure the whole night.

I don't know when Lucy entered the room. When she saw us I couldn't control it so I snapped angrily at her to get out of my room. To which she apologized and ran away closing the door behind her.

I didn't like it when I snapped at her because she was a mother like figure to me. I mentally made a note to apologize her later, when Megan started kissing me and we began to give each other pleasure again and again.

Two days later, finally I was given down the company's ownership and remained very busy and my so-called wife eroded away from my mind.

Today I had a very important meeting which will bring a very big profit to my company and I had to show people that I was worth it.

But my stupid car broke down in the middle of the road. I was literally running late. I don't know why I chose this car today.

I opened the hood of the car to check where the problem was. I had some ideas about it because when I was in college I worked in a mechanic shop to pass time.

I took out the car's toolbox from the trunk and kept it near the tire and also the carb fuel because I was going to take the car to servicing after the meeting.

I was just going to start my complicated work when my phone rang.

I cursed loudly and took it out of my pocket to see the caller ID. It was Ron who was previously my Dad's PA who is now my PA.

I picked up the call and he began to shower me with his babblings and some important things. I wasn't able to hear him clearly because of the bad network so I decided to walk a little farther away from my car to get the network.

My car was still not repaired, and when I came back to the spot where I left my car, I saw a girl.

She was tall from an average girl and had golden hair. I couldn't see her face because her back was facing me.

Then it hit me—was she stealing something? I was already late and now I had to deal with this.

I ran towards the car shouting.

She just carried her books and ran away.

When I reached the car, I investigated the engine to check what she did and to my surprise, she didn't steal anything but she repaired it.

Seriously, I mean how can a girl do that?

Not possible.

I started the engine to find it coming to live and roaring loudly.

I closed the hood and kept the tool box inside the trunk and rode faster.

Damn, I couldn't thank that girl.

There is still some human in this world who help other without hoping to get anything back in return.

And that girl was one of them.

She was an Angel for me.

I reached the meeting on time and I showed them what I have got. Everyone present there were impressed and finally we got the deal.

On my way back home I went to my bar which I owned to celebrate so I announced everyone present there that today's drink is from the house for everyone. They all cheered and I raised the glass saying, "To an angel."

At least I could do this much for that girl.

Then they all started having fun when I found this hot chick and decided to celebrate a little more.

I took her to my place and enjoyed the night.

It's been three months to my marriage and my so called wife didn't intervene in my life. Guess she is enjoying the money which she gets in her account by me.

But my thoughts changed when one day I was enjoying this girl named Priscilla when I got a call from Dad. He rarely calls me after my marriage. I picked it up when Priscilla started kissing me on my neck.

"What do you want dad?," I said as soon as I picked up the call.

"Hello to you too, son, always so straight forward…" he chuckled, but I could get a hint of anger in his voice, which he was trying to suppress under his sarcastic comments.

"I'll be giving you a visit within two hours and I want to talk about something very serious especially with you," he said in a pissed tone.

"Oh, okay. I'll be waiting," I said nervously.

"I want to meet you two, which means you husband and wife both," he said in a monotone.

"Yeah, I got you. I—we—will be waiting,," I said and he hung up on me.

I thought for a moment. He rarely visits me, so now what's up with him?

Then it hit me.

My so called wife has told him everything.

Damn it.

I was fuming so badly that I threw Priscilla out of my bed. She was still naked.

"Wha-What happened, baby?," she screeched so loudly that I had to put my fingers in my ear.

"Take your stuff and get out."

"Baby, why are you sending me out of your house so early its only eight a.m," she whined.

I threw her clothes on her and wore my track pants and a vest. I threw some money at her so she could reach her home.

"Enough, Priscilla, get out before I kick you out of my house," I shouted angrily. She ran away wearing her half dress and a heel in her one hand.

Nobody wants to deal with me when I'm angry.

Now it's your turn, wifey.

I angrily matched towards her room and saw her running towards her room. I think she have got it that I was angry at her and was coming to her.

But before she could enter her room, I took hold of her both arms from her back side and shoved her face plant to the door.

I can't help it when I'm angry.

She squealed loudly and gasped.

Chapter 12

Angela

I got up from the floor where I was still sobbing and went inside the room. Lucy gasped when she saw the wounds on my left hand. She took hold of my hand and examined it. She went inside the bathroom and brought the medical kit and applied the medicine on my bruised arm and cleaned the cut, making me wince in pain and applied a band aid over it.

After she was done she hugged me and left for me to get ready. I took a shower and went inside the closet to change my dress. I decided to wear a long sleeved floral dress to hide my bruised arms. It was just not my day. The day started with Mr. Knights yelling and abusing me for a reason that I didn't even had any idea and to top of that Mr. Brad is also going to give us a visit. I wonder why he wanted to meet us all of a sudden.

This father and son…

It's already 10 AM and I think Mr. Brad will be here anytime soon.

As I went downstairs I saw him sitting on the couch typing something on his phone.

I heard the doorbell and knew Mr. Brad had arrived. Lucy went to get the door when Mr. Knights shoved his phone back to his pocket. When he got up, I got nervous not wanting to be near him after what happened in the morning unknowingly I took two to three steps back.

Mr. Brad came to the living room and he greeted his son with a nod then he came towards me. I smiled and hugged him sideways.

"How are you dear?" he asked warmly.

"I'm fine, Mr. Brad," I replied, smiling.

"Dear, how many times I would have to say that call me Dad, not Mr. Brad." He almost pouted.

"Okay, I'm fine, Dad," I replied again.

He smiled and took a seat opposite to us for which I had to seat with Mr. Knights.

I was very nervous. My heart was beating furiously.

What if he doesn't like me sitting with him and he snaps at me?

I cautiously sat beside Mr. Knights, who was still not looking at me.

"So how is everything going?" asked Mr. Brad.

"What do you want, Dad?" asked Mr. Knights more like snapped.

Mr. Knights rolled his eyes and said, "Always straight to the point. "

"Anyways, I'm here to give you guys a lovely surprise," chirped Mr. Brad."There is this very important event which I'm going to host in Paris, so you both, I mean the newly wedded couple, ought to be present there. "

I saw Mr. Knights clenching his jaw but masked it with a perfect smile.

"Of course, we would love to come," said Mr. Knights too sweetly.

I gulped inaudibly. I knew Mr. Knights was up to something.

I just nodded at Mr. Brad and smiled.

"And what is this event about?" asked Mr. Knights.

"Oh, this event is for a cancer trust. So you both have to be present in this event as you are my son and daughter-in-law and this event is very important for our family in order to maintain our family reputation," said Mr. Brad. The event will be held at the end of this week, so you both better get ready for it… Oh, and the most important part"—Mr. Brad clapped his hands and stood up—"after the function guess what I have planned for you two?" he asked , looking dreamingly at us.

I gave him a questioning look.

"You are going for your honeymoon," he declared, making us both stand up in shock."I hope everything is fine between you two," he said while we walked him to his car.

"Yes, everything is fine," I said, trying my best to lie before him.

"Hmm, I hope Xavier is taking good care of you?" he questioned, and I nodded, smiling at him.

"Dear, I know sometimes my son is too much but, dear, I can assure you he is not a bad guy. He is just lost and needs help to be found. My son is really kind in his heart so, please promise me you will understand and act maturely when such situation comes where you have to take decisions," he said, his eyes showing mixture of emotions. "My son is my only hope for the future of my business and for me you are my hope who will guide my son and take care of him," he said, his voice breaking down in the last part.

But why did you pull me into all this even after knowing my problems?

Is this how business man deal with their own family?

Why Mr. Brad just why? What do you exactly want from me?

He took a deep breath and composed himself and looked down smiling at me."I know I'm being selfish asking so much from you, but what can I do? He is my son after all. My only heir. "

"No, you are not being selfish," I said, looking up and forced a smile.

"I understand parents wish only the best for their children, and so are you. It's completely fine. I promise you I will take care of him no matter what. I won't let you down. You have helped my family and even there is so many questions that is going inside my mind I think for the time being I will stay quiet for I have a debt to pay" I said truthfully.

"I knew it. I have chosen the best for my son," he muttered to himself but I heard it. A small smile appeared on my face hearing his words.

"God bless you child and remember I'm always there for you so if need any help just give me a call," he said and I nodded.

"And tell that stubborn kid to reach Paris on time for the event. It's really important for me and I want both of you there before time. Take care child. "

I stood there for some minutes, watching his car drive by the driveway. I sighed, feeling little sad, and whispered to myself, "If only I could tell you the truth, but I guess you already have an idea about it," I looked down at my bruised hand.

After he left, I quickly came back to my room. Mr. Knights had seemed to be angrier by this because I could hear things crashing and him shouting from the other room.

After that he had left the mansion and it's already midnight but he still hasn't returned back.

Sitting on the sofa in my room, I looked up to the sky from my window. I am not feeling sleepy because Mr. Brad's surprise was really a great shock for us, especially for me.

I could see the rustling of leaves in the trees from my window. The moon seemed to be glowing more brightly. The silence of my room and the environment calmed me.

How am I going to survive this marriage?

God help me.

Chapter 13

It's been four days since Mr. Brad showed up with an unpleasant honeymoon planning surprise. Mr. Knights seemed to calm down a bit. He seriously have a great anger issue. He usually comes late at night, did his dinner, then he directly go back to his room or kept himself busy in his study room.

I think I'm alive because we never crossed each other's path in this mansion.

A tap on my shoulder snapped me out of my thoughts and I looked behind to find Lucy giving me a worried look. I gave her a questioning look of my own when she said "Are you alright sweetie?"

"Yes?" My answer was more like a question.

"Sweetie, I have been asking you about something from last five minutes and you just kept on humming in response and stirring the soup, which has already started to thicken."

Realizing hit me and I quickly added water to the already thickened soup and switched off the stove keeping it aside.

"What's wrong, sweetie?," she asked me, giving me a worried look.

I smiled."Oh, its nothing. I was just thinking about Dad, Em, and my brothers. "

She nodded and she seems to buy it, because she said, "I understand, sweetie."

Currently, I am preparing dinner while Lucy is cleaning in the kitchen. I have been cooking in this house since a month and Lucy said I was a great cook. I loved cooking. I even cooked sometimes in Dad's restaurant and every day in Em's apartment.

I wonder how Em is managing without me.

I looked at Lucy to see her rotating the switch of the blender with an annoyed expression.

"Oh, dear, I think this blender finally gave up,," she said, scowling at the blender.

I grabbed the blender from her and asked Lucy to bring me a screwdriver. She gave me a confused look but did as she was told. I checked the outer part of the blender then started to open its body using the screwdriver. Finally, I got the problem. It was the drive stud. I tightened it and re-checked its fuse. Then I put everything back to its place and plugged in its plug to the switch board.

The blender began to work perfectly.

I looked at Lucy to find her jaws dropped to the floor. I gave her an amused look and went to prepare my food, humming a song.

I think she didn't believe me when I told her that I fixed somebody's car that day.

I smiled and carried on dicing the veggies.

When the dinner was done, I helped Lucy in placing the plates in the dining room.

At first I used to wait for Mr. Knights to come and join me for dinner but I soon stopped doing so when One day he threw everything from the table and went inside his room yelling "Stop irritating me, can't you just leave me the hell alone? I'm sick of you. "

From that day I had stopped waiting for him. I just wanted to have a quite dinner with him, but I don't know why he sees everything like I'm doing all this to get something from him.

In my entire life nobody talked to me with such rudeness. I never did anything which would hurt people but at the end I don't know why Mr. Knights wants to hurt me so badly.

I did my dinner silently and of course lonely and went inside my room.

It's past midnight when I heard the main door open.

I guess it's Mr. Knights.

I heard something crash, which made me jolt up in my bed. Then I heard him yelling.

I wore my cardigan and cautiously went outside. I saw Mr. Knights sitting in dinner table and he was murmuring something. I went little closer to hear what he was saying because something seemed off. He was behaving oddly. Then he yelled, making me jump on my feet.

"Lucy, where is the damn food? I'm hungry," he shouted then hiccupped, making me realize he was drunk.

Oh, God no...

Lucy went away to her staff quarters to sleep. Generally she would wait for Mr. Knights, but today she was little unwell so I send her literally forced her to go back to her room. I found out that the workers in this mansion were living in their staff quarters, which was at the backside of this mansion.

Mr. Knights began to make his body sway to and forth shouting, "Give me food. Give me food." He began to sing, "Lucy give me fooooood. "

Oh, God, what should I do?

I nervously went inside the kitchen and microwaved the food. Then very slowly and cautiously I went near Mr. Knights, whose head was down on the table. I served his food very fast and I was just about to turn when he held my hand, making my heart come to my throat.

"Wait, don't go! Stay here, Lucy. I don't want to eat alone," he said still not sobering up.

Oh, God, he thinks me as Lucy?

Perhaps it is good if I don't let him know that I'm his wife because as soon as he knows this, he might throw everything on me.

I closed my mouth and turned my back to him so that he doesn't find out it's me, not Lucy. I stood their silently while he started eating.

"Mmm, Lucy, the food is really delicious," he moaned, making my cheeks to heat up.

After he was done, he slowly stood up from his chair and began to go back to his room, swaying to and forth. I kept watching silently when he suddenly stumbled in his feet and was ready to fell down, making me breath hitch. I put my hands on my chest in relief when he held the railing of the stairs to support him.

"Uggh, my head hurts," he groaned in frustration.

I nervously walked to him and while my heart was beating faster than it already was. I got hold of his hand and took it around my shoulders to support his body on mine.

I just put my hand inside the lion's mouth.

I helped him on the stairs while both of us swayed to and forth, I was very nervous. I kept on hiding my face using my hair as a shield, I have never experienced supporting a well built drunk man.

Chapter 14

Mr. Knights was very heavy but finally with great difficulties we reached his room. I stopped on my tracks making Mr. Knights to lean on me sideways. Last time I came to his room. I saw him making out with a red haired woman.

Mr. Knights started to murmur something in my ear which I didn't quite understand.

Taking a deep breath I supported him with my one hand and turned the door knob to open. His room was a mess. Everything was out of its place, clothes were thrown on the floor. The bed was undone. It is the first time I came to his room. But still the room was very big compared to my room and everything in the room seemed very expensive. The lights of the room were dimmed and the bed sheets were of black.

I guess Mr. Knights likes the color black and the darkness of this room perfectly explains his personality.

I carefully took hold of Mr. Knights hand and my intensions were to make him sleep on his bed. But he fell down on his bed pulling me with him. I fell on top of him.

When my eyes were widened, his eyes were closed. My cheeks started to heat up and I tried to get up only to be pulled back by him. He was holding me on top of him by my waist. I had to take several deep and long breaths to calm myself down. I looked at his face to see a frown on his forehead. His beautiful face had facial hairs which made him more and attractive and I could see eye bags forming under his eyes probably due to lack of sleep.

Cautiously I touched his frown with my fingers to smoothen it and gently unwrapped his hands around my waist and finally with great difficulties I stood up. I helped him with his shoes and socks then I pulled the duvets over him and made his head comfortable under the pillow.

While going I looked back at him for the last time because it was my first and probably the last polite and civil interaction with Mr. Knights.

A small smile appeared on my lips and I switched off the lights in his room and gently closed the door behind me.

I made my way back to my room and slept on my bed thinking what a day it was.

I was busy packing my stuffs in my Samsonite when there was a knock at my room's door. I thought it may be Lucy so I went to get the door. When I tried to open the door, it didn't open like someone was pulling it from outside.

"Lucy?," I asked confused on why she isn't opening the door.

But I was soon greeted with a muscular throat clearing voice.

I remained silent and waited for him to speak. He cleared his throat again and I thought I heard him curse under his breath. Then he spoke "Uh it's me...Lucy hasn't come to work today and I wanted to say that pack your bags, we will be leaving in an hour and yeah for the event pack something white and black because it is the theme of the event"

I heard footsteps fading away so I guess he left. I opened the door and perked outside to find no one there.

I packed as he told and got ready wearing a white sleeved shirt and black jeans. The bruises in my arms are still there and I don't people to see it so wearing a dress with sleeves is appropriate for me. I decided to leave my hair down and I chose to wear a black stiletto, which perfectly matched with my attire.

I got my back and went downstairs to find the chauffeur waiting for us. He took my luggage from me want towards the limousine.

Lucy came to meet me this morning to wish me a wonderful journey. She told me that she was going back to her family because her husband was sick. I was convinced with her plan to go back to Italy because family support is really needed at the time of sickness.

I made my way towards the limo and said a quiet "Thank you" to the chauffeur who was holding the car door for me. He smiled and bowed his head. I want inside the limousine only to be hit hard with the familiar manly and strong scent. I saw Mr. Knights sitting at the farther most away from in the limo as usually typing on his laptop.

The limo began to move and I sighed averting my gaze towards the window. Soon we reached the airport and then only I knew we were going to use one of his private plane to Paris.

Of course, rich people.

Our luggage was taken by the chauffeur to the plane and I saw two stewardesses were standing outside the plane with smiling and bowing to greet us. I just gave them a small smile in return.

Mr. Knights was leading the way and I was trailing like a lost puppy after him. When we were inside the plane a good looking man greeted us shaking hands with Mr. Knights and taking my hands and kissing it making me blush.

"Hello sir, ma'am, I'm Vitaly Pimenov and I'm your pilot for today." He smiled showing his perfectly whitened teeth. From his accent I could tell he was a Russian. He gestured us to take our seats inside the cabin.

It was really a luxurious plane. Never in my life had I flied using a private and that to all luxurious jet. Everything inside the jet was so sophisticated. There was a row of sofas beside the windows and seeing a door I could guess there was a bedroom too.

I took my seat beside the window and relaxed. I saw Mr. Knights going inside that room which I think is the bedroom.

Soon the flight took off and I relaxed thinking about Paris. I always wanted to visit Paris. I'm really excited and happy. I hoped this visit would bring some change in my life.

I sighed and decided to take a nap.

I was woken up by someone calling me. I looked up to see the stewardesses smiling at me."Ma'am, its already three hours since we took off, would you like to eat something?"

"Yeah, sure."

She went away to bring the food while I sat up and fixed my dress and checked the time.

I slept for three hours?

She came back with the food and she served me the food along with the wine glass and I left.

I ate my food silently and enjoyed the wine, savoring its taste in every gulp.

When I was done, she came back and took my plates away with her.

Chapter 15

It's been Four hours and there is no sign of Mr. Knights. I wonder what he is doing?

I got off from my seats to use the washroom. I went directly into a room and I found the Stewardesses eating her food. She looked up at me and stood up.

"Can I help you on something ma'am?" she asked smiling professionally.

"Oh, yeah sorry for my interference, but where is the washroom? "

"Oh, no problem ma'am, it's on your left"

I nodded and went to the washroom. After I was done I washed my hands and got out from the washroom only to be crashed by a wall who got hands and who held me from falling.

I looked up to find its Vitaly the pilot.

"Sorry ma'am, are you alright?" he asked in his Russian accent.

"Yeah, I'm fine," I said and stepped away from his hold.

I went back to my seat and looked out of the window only to find clouds, clouds, and clouds.

Still more four hours to go and I'm already bored.

I decided to chat with the stewardesses. So I made my way to them. She was sitting on her seat alone and was gazing out of the window but soon noticed my presence and got up from her seat but before she could say anything to me, extending my hand I said: "Hi I'm Angela Knights. "

She looked confused but nevertheless accepted my hand and said, "I'm Valerie Arthos,"

We chatted for what seems like an hour and came to know about a lot about each other.

After seven hours and forty-six minutes we finally reached Paris Airport. Finally Mr. Knights came out of his room and took a seat away from me.

When the plane landed he got off from his plane and went towards the exit. I knew he would never bother to ask me so, I just followed him. I saw Valerie on my way to outside and smiled and said my good byes to her to which she replied with waving her hand and mouthing me "Goodbye" like a school kid.

She sure had a bubbly personality.

There was already a limo waiting for us.

Our luggage were already taken by the chauffeur and soon we were on our way to the hotel.

Everything was so fancy about Paris. I totally loved this place. When we reached the hotel we were directly escorted to our suites. It was a big and very expensive suite which consisted of two bedrooms, a living room a big balcony attached to every bedroom and a small kitchen.

So beautiful.

My luggage were kept inside the bedroom by the hotel staff and I knew Mr. Knights luggage were kept in the other room due to his strict instructions.

I made my way towards my room to see a king sized bed placed in the middle of the room and I went inside the bathroom to find a Jacuzzi.

Oh, God its heaven.

I took a long and relaxing bath in the Jacuzzi and slept on the bed to get rid of my Jet lag.

While I was trying to sleep, two things kept on disturbing my mind.

The event function which was tomorrow and Mr. Knight's planning for our honeymoon.

I woke up to hear the doorbell ring. I got up from my bed and looked at the clock to see its nine a. m.

I slept so long?

I went to get the door. While going I heard the sounds of shower running from the other room. I guess Mr. Knights is taking his shower. I looked through the peephole to find Mr. Brad.

I fixed my dress and hair and open the door wide open for him to come in.

"Hello, good morning sorry to keep you waiting," I greeted him.

"Good morning dear, it's okay" he replied and smiled. I escorted him to the living room and he took his seat on the sofa. Then he looked around and raised an eyebrow and asked "Where is Xavier?"

"He is taking a shower," I replied faking a smile.

"Oh, okay, by the way I came here to inform that you must reach the event by 7 pm sharp. I want to introduce you both to my friends and business associates"

"And yeah there is a car waiting for you outside right now so if you want you can go for shopping" he said giving me a card.

I took the card from him and gave him a confused look.

"Dear, show this card to the shop owner and your chosen dress will not be charged and don't worry, he said looking at my denying expression this card is given to every VIP guests who are coming to the party and choose something that has black and white color in it because I guess Xavier might have already told you that it is the theme of the event"

I smiled and nodded.

Then we began to talk about some other things when we heard the door of Mr. Knights room clicked.

I told an 'Excuse Me' and went inside my room. I heard Mr. Knights and Dad talking then I heard the front door close.

I guess Mr. Brad left.

Though I have brought a dress for the event, but I think I should get a new one which will be more appropriate for the event.

I went inside the bathroom and did my business then took a quick shower and wore the bathrobe and came out of the bathroom. I wore a black sleeved shirt gown and my black stilettos. I applied mascara to my eye lashes and applied pink lip gloss. I brushed my hair down and took my matching black handbag and of course the card which Mr. Knights gave me and made my way to the living room.

I saw Mr. Knights sitting in the balcony, sipping his coffee and working on his laptop. So I guessed I will be going alone for the shopping. I made my silently out of my room and towards the elevator.

I pressed on the ground button and waited the doors of the elevator to close when a hand stopped it. I saw a blonde man wearing a white suit and expensive watch and shoes step in the elevator. I could feel his gaze on me throughout the elevator ride which creeped me out. From my peripheral vision I saw him moving towards me I was ready to scream when thanks to God the door pinged open signaling that we reached the floor.

I ran out of the door and towards the lobby. I made my way towards the exit of the hotel and as dad said, there was a car waiting for me.

I hoped in the car and the driver started driving the car. I guess he knows where we were going.

The car came to a halt before a beautiful boutique. I went inside the Boutique and towards the manager's desk. There was a lady in her mid-thirties dressed like a manger. She looked up to me and gave me a smile and stood up."Welcome to Pearl Boutique, how can I help you Ma'am?"

I gave her the card which Dad gave me and she took it, raising a perfectly shaped eyebrow.

"Oh, Mrs. Knights, dress for the event?," she asked .

I nodded and she escorted to me pick out a gown for me. After trying two to three dresses I finally got the perfect dress for the evening. It was a long sleeved maxi dress with black colored in the middle my middle part of my body and white in the side of my body.

I came out of the trial room to hear gasps from the boutique workers and also the manager.

"Oh, you look lovely in this dress, Ma'am," the manager chirped."Your curves perfectly give a contrast to the dress"

I blushed and said, "Thank you. "

I bought that dress and didn't but any heels because my height was enough for the dress.

I asked the driver to take me some cafe as I skipped breakfast in the morning. The driver took me to a cafe named "Cafe de Paris. "

A lady greeted me saying "Bonjour."

I too replied back and ordered a coffee and some cookies. I took my time in eating those delicious cookies. The coffee was amazing too.

Chapter 16

I decided to take a tour a little because I still had plenty of time left for the event. So I went to see the Eiffel Tower. I have heard that it looks more beautiful in night. I saw many couples under the tower. No wonder it is called the place for lovers.

After roaming everywhere and buying some gifts for Lucy, Em, Dustin and everyone I know, I came back to the hotel. I opened the door of my suite using the extra card which I had got while going out of the room and found Mr. Knights watching TV sitting silently in the living room. I closed the door little loudly so that he could know my presence. I went inside my room and kept the bags on the floor and plopped on the bed.

It was the time for the event and me and Mr. Knights were sitting in the limo of course, away from each other. When we reached the Venue our Windows were began to tap by the Paparazzi. Our body guards began to push them to a side so that we could come out.

Mr. Knights went out of the limo and held the door for me to come out. He then held my hand and began to make his way away from the wild paparazzi who clicked on clicking pictures of us.

When we reached the inside of the hall he left my hand and made his way to a table. I followed him and sat on the table beside him. Soon the function began and I could see Dad hosting the event. I looked around to see everyone wearing black and white dress to support the theme of the event.

The event was for the cancer People.VIP people had to donate money to the cancer trust in order to save the people.

The event was a success and I could see many people donating money for the trust. But I could see the real reason behind the donation. Some were donating to show their VIP status and some were trying to show themselves as the kind one. Very few people donated due to humanity.

After the function dad approached us and began to introduce us to his friends and business associates. But one particular man grabbed my attention. It was the same blonde haired man back from the elevator who creeped me out. He was wearing a black tuxedo with white tie which shows that he was here for the event. He was wearing a costly Watch and was sipping the red wine from the glass which he was holding in his right hand showing his expensive watch. I found out that his name John Winters and he was one of Dad's business associates.

When I was introduced to him, he took hold of my hand and kissed it making me shiver in a very bad way. But I think he got the wrong idea because seeing me tremble he smirked winking at me.

I quickly withdrew my hand away from his hold and gave him a disgusted look. Standing near him suffocated me and the he was looking at my body like he was undressing me in his mind.

I wanted to get away from that creepy man. So I excused myself and went near the bar to have something to drink. I ordered myself a glass of water and began to drink when I felt a presence beside me.

I looked up to see that same creepy blonde man.

Perhaps my decision to leave from there was wrong; I should have stuck around with Mr. Knights or Dad.

He smiled more like gave me his smirk and sat down without my permission to my left side of the table.

What a Man with etiquette.

"What a lovely and beautiful lady like you sitting alone in here" he asked faking me with his fake charm.

"I was just waiting for Dad and my husband to come Mr. Winters," I said stressing on my husband.

He cringed at the word husband but masked it with a fake smile and said "Oh, I see, and please call me John" he said and tried to hold my hand but I took my hands away from him to which he shook his head and gave me his smirk and went away.

I huffed out my breath feeling relieved that he went away.

I got up from my place and decided to search for dad. I went near the door of the dining hall when a hand muffed my mouth and took hold of my waist dragging me towards a dark room.

I began to shout but my shouts came out in a muffled way because of his hand and perhaps I knew who was dragging me.

I began to struggle and wiggle out of his hold but it was no use. He dragged me inside the room and threw me making me stumble on my feet, making me fell down. I cried in pain when my left leg twisted oddly.

The man closed the door behind him and turned around.

John Winters.

He began to advance me slowly like a predator to its prey.

I swallowed hard and cried looking at him with wide eyes.

"So beautiful, what curves you have. Oh, God, I can't control," he groaned.

"What are you doing, leave me, I'm married," I shouted.

He made a tsk tsk sound and advanced me. I started to crawl backwards using my elbows.

"Married really? What a Lame excuse" he sneered "when I saw you this morning alone and in that black dress I wanted to take you right there in that elevator but then you ran away but see, I again got a chance"

"Looks like the nature also wants us to meet" he said smirking.

"And when I saw your husband and your relationship with him I knew from your awkward silence around each other that he isn't satisfying you with your needs else you won't have gone alone for the tour this morning"

Oh, God he stalked me today? What a disgusting Man.

"I haven't seen any girl as beautiful as you and I know you also want me as I want you" he said like a psychopath and jumped on me pinning my hands down to over my head.

Struggling and pushing against him I yelled on top of my lungs for help but gasped in shock when the bastard began to kiss and suck my neck forcefully.

Tears began to stream down my face and I was just near in losing my hopes when a shiny vase kept on the floor distracted me.

Quickly composing my thoughts I reached for it and kneed him on his shin which caused him to yelp in pain but as soon as his grip on me loosed I took the opportunity and hit him hard on his head. He cried in pain and held his head and taking it as the chance I pushed him using my one hand and quickly got up but he took hold of dress from my shoulder and tried pull me down again… letting my dress ripped open from my shoulder.

I screamed and hit him hard with the vase making him whimper in pain and while he rolled on the ground cursing and wincing, I took this opportunity to free myself. Hurrying to the locked door I looked back once again towards the pathetic guy to ensure myself that he wasn't following; unlocked the door and ran across the corridor still feeling my heart about to explode because of fear.

Thanks to God nobody was there to see me in that ripped dress.

I took a cab and went back to the hotel. Reaching the hotel, I saw my chauffeur standing outside to whom I called and asked to pay the cab.

It was already very late at night so, few people were present in the lobby.

I went towards the elevator and pushed my suites' floor button. When the door pinged open I ran towards my suite and opened the door using the card and closed it behind me making sure to lock it and then hurried to my room. Locking the door, I went inside the bathroom.

Chapter 17

The clock read six in the morning. Still curled in a ball I sobbed silently but couldn't close my eyes. Every time I closed my eyes the dreadful memories of that man trying to rape me came flooding back into my mind and that scared me even more. Why is everything so wrong with me?

What sin have I done to undergo such pain and humiliation?

My shoulder had scratch marks, bruises and my dress was torn. That man ruined my self confidence and tried to harm my dignity. Everything is ruined now. I couldn't even muster up courage to stand back on my feet and walk out of the room. My heart was still pounding against my chest and even though I knew that he was not around…I couldn't control my emotions and sobbed furiously hugging my body as I felt darkness overpowering me.

Run

If you stop, I'll catch you.

He smiled…an evil smile that betrayed all innocence.

A knock on my room's door made me jolt up from the floor as I looked at the closed door alarmed and defensive.

Oh no! he is here. He is here…What should I do?

My mind screamed at me and begged me to run and hide somewhere safe but as I looked around the room my hopes broke as I found nowhere to hid nor run.

"We have to attend a party this evening… so be ready by seven," the person spoke from behind the closed door and as soon as my brain registered the person's voice relief washed over me and I pulled myself up and held the table for support as my knees wobbled a little. Even though it was the person who gave nothing but pain to me yet my body relaxed when it knew about him being present in the suite.

He delivered his message and left while I just stood there for some minutes. While I still struggled to control my emotions, I made up mind that I wouldn't let that evil man succeed in ruining me. I knew I was strong and I could easily get over it if I made up my mind and held the determination. Hence, composing myself I took several breaths in and out and relaxed a little. Determined to get over it, I walked to the wardrobe where I took my clothes and changed into a comfortable one and threw the torn dress into the dustbin.

It took me some minutes to compose myself as I washed my face and looked at myself into the mirror. There she was, pale and looking exhausted. Eyes were red and puffed, make up was smudged. I had to splash water several times as I held my head that was now throbbing.

"Its okay Angela. You can do it," like a mantra I chanted it as a slogan wanting to stay strong and like a miracle it seemed to work as I sat on a chair in the balcony and gazed at the buildings of Paris.

Time seemed to pass by quickly because when I checked the time it was already ten past in the morning.

At first, I thought that this trip to Paris will be the most memorable one that I would always remember in my life but now when I think of it…surely I'll remember this trip till my very end. This trip has given me such scars that even if I want…I can never erase it from my memories.

There was a knock at the door. I got up from my seat to get the door. I looked through the peephole to see it's the bell boy standing with a trolley full of foods.

I opened the door and looked at him confused.

He cleared his throat and said "Sir has ordered the breakfast for two people."

I let him in and he went away bowing his head.

I was really hungry. I haven't eaten anything from yesterday. The aroma of the coffee filled my nose and there were ginger breads with scrambled egg and bacon.

I took whatever I wanted to eat and went back to the balcony. We were at the twelfth floor.

I enjoyed the view of the city and my breakfast in bliss. Last night's incident long gone from my mind.

When I was done, I went back to the living room and switched on the TV in hopes of watching something that would distract my thoughts.

As I picked up my purse, I checked my look for the third time in the mirror. I was wearing a brown colored evening gown which had long sleeves which completely succeeded in hiding the bruises. My make up was simple and I held the gold locket which was actually a gift from my brothers. It reminded me of them and their protectiveness.

Its strange how I always wanted to get out of their protective wings but now when I have my freedom, I want to go back and hide under their wings. I'm sure that if they were here I would've never been into all this kind of situation.

I heaved a sigh and looked at myself in the mirror as I kept the purse on the table and brushed my hair down.

I was ready.

Mr. Knights has already left half an hour ago and I was informed that he will be waiting for me directly in the restaurant.

I closed the front door and took the elevator and towards the exit of the building. I hopped in the car and as usually the driver began to drive knowing where to take me.

The car came to a halt before a five star French restaurant and I got out of the car making my way towards the restaurant. I was greeted by the manager of the restaurant and he escorted me towards the table.

I saw Mr. Knights already present there and a group of people. I made my way towards them and everybody except Mr. Knights looked up at me. There were two girls who had caked their face with excess make up and were wearing extremely short dresses. The blonde woman wore a black short dress which ended at her thigh while the other girl had raven colored hair and was wearing a pink cocktail dress. They both looked at me and then gave me a disgusted look.

What did I do?

The others were guys. There were four guys including Mr. Knights.

The guys gave me lustful look while only one guy genuinely smiled at me to whom I smiled back.

"Angela… right?" He asked.

I smiled and nodded.

"Hi, I'm Dominic Clearwater" he said extending his hand to which I shook grateful.

The other guys were Joshua with brown hair and a crooked nose and Michael who had black hair.

That blonde girl's name was Stephanie and other one was Kim.

Stephanie was sitting close to Mr. Knights and I could see her one hand reach to Mr. Knights thigh and she started rubbing her hand on his thigh during the whole conversation. Mr. Knights also didn't seem to mind it at all.

The waiter came and gave us the menus. Everything flew out of my head because it was all written in French. Even though I could speak and understand French I was not really good with French letters.

I heard a giggle and looked up to see both the girls talking with Mr. Knights.

I asked Dominic for help and he smiled nodding that he got it.

When the waiter took away the orders, I found the two girls looking at me whispering and suddenly they laughed.

Then they said something in French which I quite didn't understand properly because they spoke too fast but everyone except Dominic and Mr. Knights started to laugh.

Then Stephanie said, "Regarder, sa robe n'estmême pascher."And made a disgusted look.

I understood what she said but kept quiet.

"Stop it, Stephanie" Dominic hissed.

"Oh, Dominic,l'aimez -vous?" Kim said, mocking him.

"Then why don't you take her to some hotel and screw her like the whore she is," sneered Stephanie, making my eyes to water up. She spoke it in French but I understood everything. How could she humiliate a person she doesn't even know? Why does everyone hate me so much?

My palm formed into a fist as I bit down the inside of my mouth and continued to hear there humiliation. They were clearly oblivious to the fact that I could understand what they were speaking and to whom they were regarding it.

"Stephanie and Kim it's enough, okay? She is Xavier's wife," Dominic hissed.

"Oh, please Dominic, we all know she is a whore who trapped our poor Xavier in this marriage, "Stephanie said looking my way.

I looked at Mr. Knights for help. But he was holding his wine glass and was looking at it staying unaffected by the insults I was getting.

They kept on insulting and humiliating me while laughing noisily.

The guys were not saying anything but were just eating their food.

I couldn't take it anymore so I stood up making everyone's eyes on me and in a calm tone said: "Thank you for dinner, it was lovely meeting you all"

"Likewise" Stephanie huffed.

But before I could go I said: "ilétaitagréable de vousrencontrer" (it was nice meeting you all) in French making their eyes widened and the guys lowered their heads in shame.

Chapter 18

I went out of the restaurant and avoided the driver who was looking at my teary face with a confused look.

Aimlessly I wandered on the street when it poured and I slumped on a bench on the side of the road.

It poured heavily all of a sudden and I looked down at the ground where the rain water dropped on the ground and trickled down towards the pavement and into the gutter.

Just like my luck.

My luck is just like this gutter.

My dress was completely soaked, but I didn't care any longer. After going through so much I hardly had any more strength left in me to cry or to yell. It was getting hard for me to understand anything that was going on in my surrounding. The rain camouflaged my tears and I wiped silently feeling every drop of rain water on me.

I loved rain. It always made me happy. My mom used to say that "Rain would wash away your pain with its every single drop. Let it lessen your pain, your sore memories for the rain will shower only for a few minutes until the pain strikes back on you with the rhythm of the rain, showering heavily. Take the moment and let it lessen it be that only for some minutes," and at this moment, I wished her words were true and the rain seriously washes away my wounds that were not visible.

It is surprising me that I'm stopped crying so fast.

Perhaps the clouds are crying on behalf of me. Maybe it's a message from my mom to stay strong.

Leaning against the bench I watched as the vehicles drove away. I was completely drenched.

Suddenly the rain stopped pouring on me and I looked up to see my driver holding an umbrella over me. He gave me a sympathetic look and politely said: "Ma'am please get into the car."

I didn't want to go but still I nodded and did as he told me to do. I abruptly took my steps towards the car and got in. I began to shiver due to cold. Perhaps sensing this, the driver turned on the heater of the car.

We reached back to the hotel and I got out of the car and went inside the hotel. Everyone present in the lobby was looking at me.

I was still completely soaked and droplets of water were falling from my dress and hair. I reached my suite using the elevator and went inside the suite.

Mr. Knights had already reached the suite before me and he was watching TV in the living room. I went inside my room and dried myself. I took a bath not wanting to catch a cold and plopped on the bed.

I woke up to my phone vibrating continuously. I checked the caller's ID to see its Em.

A smile appeared on my face and I quickly accepted the call. Before I could speak she spoke "Angie? Angie are you alright?"

Her sudden outburst made me confused. "Calm down, Em, yes I'm fine, what's the matter?"

I could hear that she took a long breath and exhaled loudly, then she spoke, "Oh, thank God, it's nothing."

"What is it Em, what are you hiding?"

"Actually Angie, I had a nightmare about you and saw that you were in pain so I wanted to know if you were alright?," she whispered .

I bit my lips and said, "Yes, I'm absolutely fine."

It was three in the morning so we said our goodbyes and hung up after talking a little bit.

In the morning, when I was eating my breakfast, the doorbell of our suite ring making to get the door and to find out Mr. Brad.

He was grinning like a joker. It was time for his honeymoon surprise. I held my breath when he told that we were going to Bora Bora Islands for our honeymoon. He had planned everything and he just wanted us to go and enjoy.

So this is how we ended up in being again in the private plane waiting for our destination. I wore a white sleeved shirt and blue ripped jeans and a brown cardigan. I wore my beige colored stilettos to complete my look and kept my makeup to minimal since I had no mood for getting ready.

It's been four hours since we have left Paris. As usually Mr. Knights has locked himself in his cabin and I'm seating near the window seat. I was glad that Valerie was there to accompany me in this twenty hours journey.

"I really like you," suddenly Valerie blurted out making me raise an eyebrow.

"I can assure you that I'm straight," I joked and she crossed her hands in a X form as she shook her head no.

"NO..No that's not what I meant. Uhh...actually the women who accompanied Mr. Knights always treated me like I were some diner's waiter and were always bossy, but you were the first to approach and be kind towards me" she spoke smiling at me.

I just smiled at her and sipped my wine as I looked out of the window.

I went back to my seat after an hour of chatting and once looked out of the window to see that we were flying above the sea.

The scenery was very beautiful, but suddenly my eyes noticed the flames on the wing of the jet.

Then suddenly there was a loud sound of the siren and the jet began to shake making me stumble on my feet and trip down to the floor. At first, I thought it might be the turbulence but when my eyes saw the flames of fire coming out from the wings, I began to shiver in fear. My eyes were wide opened in fear and slowly my mind began to register everything and I knew that we were in big trouble.

With great difficulty, I stood up from the floor and saw Valerie running towards me. She held me and I could hear the door behind me clicked open.

"What's going on?" boomed Mr. Knights voice and before we could do anything the jet began to rotate in an odd way throwing us here and there and soon we heard a loud blast then water everywhere.

My vision blurred and I began to lose my consciousness thinking If it was our end?

Chapter 19

Have you ever tried to get up from your bed but found your head throbbing very hard against your skull, and you see the world spinning around you making you feel nauseous?

Well, it's the feeling I am feeling right now. As I gained consciousness and felt something cold touching my feet, I slowly opened my eyes but closed them again because of the light. I again tried to reopen my eyes and let them adjust to the light. My head began to spin and I found my body aching severely in every possible part. I tried to twitch my hands but it looked like it was almost impossible to do.

A small scream escaped from my mouth due to the pain I felt on my left leg. I tried to move my hands and this time I succeeded. Groaning, I held my head with my hands to stop the world from spinning.

When I was stable, I looked at my hands to see my pinky finger of my right-hand twitching oddly. Gaining confidence and taking deep breaths, I held it with my other hand and counting from three to one, I snapped it back to its place. A loud scream escaped my mouth because of the pain I felt when I did so.

There was a deep cut in my left leg, which was the reason for my extreme pain. Blood was oozing out of it and I knew losing blood is not an option, so I tore a piece of cloth from my shirt and tied it around my wound to stop the bleeding. My head was still hurting. I touched the back of my head and could feel something wet. When I looked at my fingers it had blood on them.

God! I was bleeding from everywhere.

My body had cuts and scratches all over it. My dress was torn and ruined. My brain wondered what happened?

I tried to remember. I remembered myself sitting in rain, then I'm in a plane, then I'm talking to a girl, fire, flames, blast and water.

Everything came flooding into my mind and I solved the pieces of my memory and came to the conclusion that we were in a plane crash.

Panic filled me as I looked here and there searching for everyone. Where is Valerie? Where is Vitaly and more importantly, where is Mr. Knights?

Tears started to roll down my cheeks. I looked around to see that I was somewhere which looked like an Island. It was surrounded by the sea and I couldn't see anything far away. I looked up to see

sun shining brightly above my head. I tried to get up using my hands, but my body felt numb causing me to fall with a thud on the sand. I groaned in pain but still tried to get up.

I stood up on my feet and began to walk God knows where. My breath began to quicken and I coughed loudly. My legs were in pain but I still walked, limping and yelping.

Something grabbed my attention. I could see something far away, lying in the sand. I made my way towards it.

When I got closer, I could figure out that it was a body.

A man's body.

Realization hit me and I ran towards the body to find it was Mr. Knights. My world stopped and I was like a statue just standing there. Gaining courage, I limped to his body and saw scratches and cuts all over him. But the giant wound grabbed my attention. There was a big cut on his forearm and it was bleeding continuously.

I tore a big strip out of my shirt and wrapped it around his forearm to stop the bleeding.

His face looked pale and there were scratches all over his face. I leaned down into his chest to hear his heartbeats and thankfully it was beating. I exhaled in relief and tried to wake him up. Soon, his eyes fluttered open and he tried to adjust his eyes to the brightness. He groaned and held his head with his hands. He winced in pain when he looked at his forearm.

"Thank God," I whispered and couldn't control my emotions any longer as suddenly I broke down and sobbed.

Hearing me sob, he looked up at me and I watched as his green eyes dilated. I kept crying while he just kept on staring at me. He moved his hands and tried to reach my face, but soon winced in pain because of his forearm, resulted in him to withdraw his hand. I got worried and tried to touch his forearm but hesitated.

What if he didn't like this and shouts at me. Mr. Knights groaned and looked up at me.

"What happened?" he asked looking confused.

I told him everything that happened and by the time I finished, he was staring at me with his intense gaze. I gave him a confused look and averted my gaze, feeling uncomfortable.

I sat there for some minutes and waited for him to say something. When he didn't utter anything, I looked back at him to see him still looking at me with an emotion which I never saw in his eyes. I cleared my throat to get his attention back to me.

Did he hit his head or something?

What is wrong with him?

I stood up and signaled him to get up too. He tried to get up but fell down groaning and wincing. My hands itched to help him but I hesitated, thinking he wouldn't like me touching him.

He again tried to get up and this time he even succeeded to stand on his feet but soon began to lose his balance and was ready to kiss the ground again, but I held him from his torso and supported him in standing.

When he gained his balance and I was sure that he won't lose his balance, I tried to step away from him but he held onto my bare waist and tightened his grip making me crash into his side.

I was sure that my eyes were the size of the saucers. He started to walk holding me tightly towards the shade of the tree. We reached there and I helped him to sit down.

Then he asked me "What's your name?" and it made me think, if he seriously hit his head somewhere?

Chapter 20

"Where are you going?" he asked as I turned around and limped a little towards the sea.

"We can't forget about the others. If we are here then I think Vitaly and Valerie must be here somewhere too. I'm really worried about both of them and I hope both are safe and sound. I'm going to search for them," I said and took in a deep breath as I turned around ready to leave.

"Wait! I'll come with you," he said and I shook my head no.

"No! You don't need to. You are badly hurt and it would be good if you rest a little," I suggested but ignoring my advice he stood up from the place he was sitting and walked towards me.

"I'm fine. You are the one who has a wound on legs. I am fine," he said and even though he claimed that he was fine I knew that he was anything but fine. His face looked pale and I was sure he wasn't even feeling good because he was breathing in and out deeply.

"Bu-"

"You go that way and I'll go this way," he said cutting me off leaving no place for arguing. I decided on agreeing with his decision because none of knew if they were fine or not and judging from the location of the sun and recalling the time when I was in the plane, I figured it was already one or two in the morning.

I nodded and turned around still limping a little. Every time my left feet touched the sand it had a painful sensation and judging from the bruise, tenderness and swell I understood that I had my broken on my feet. But that didn't stop me from limping and searching for the others as I tried my best to walk; limp towards the other side of the deserted small island.

What seemed like an end, I reached a part of the island where it was surrounded by bamboo trees. I looked around everywhere and near the bank but found nothing. Disappointment and sorrow filled up my body as I thought about Valerie and Vitaly. She must have been scared and frightened because of loneliness and the accident.

Please take care of both them Jesus.

As I limped back towards the place where I last saw Mr. Knights, he was nowhere to be seen. So, I decided to go in his direction in search of him. But as I limped, I felt immense pain in the lower half of my body which caused me to tumble down on the sand. I breathed in and out heavily before getting up and continuing the search. There he was but he wasn't alone.

As soon as I realised the figure of a person laying on the bank I dashed for it.

"Mr. Knights!" I breathed out as I made my way towards Valerie and sat down next to her body. The girl looked ruined. Her face was covered with bruises and her clothes were torn. She had a cut on her lips and nearly everywhere on her body.

"What happened? Why is she still unconscious?" I asked to myself and frantically checked her pulse and her heart beat.

"I found her here. I tried my best to wake her up. Her pulse is still there but still she isn't regaining her consciousness," he told me and I patted a pale looking Valerie on her face but she did not respond.

"Please! Please god let her be fine," tears trickled down my face as I looked at her state feeling helpless and look up at Mr. Knights who had sorrow expression on his face.

"What should we do? Vitaly is nowhere to be found and Valerie is yet to regain consciousness" I asked as we laid Valerie under the tree carefully.

Chapter 21

As I looked back at him I found him already staring down at me. He had this unreadable expression on his face and I shifted on my position sitting comfortably next to Valerie.

"My father would get to know about it if we didn't reach the destination and by now, I'm sure they might have figured out about us being missing," he said and sat down on the other side of Valerie facing me. We were now sitting on either side of Valerie and he stared at my face and then his eyes roamed on my torn shirt. I felt his gaze on my stomach.

"You ripped your shirt to bandage my arm... I'm grateful for it. Thank you," he said and I just nodded in reply.

"So you're name is Angela Carson..." he asked out of nowhere and that made me look back at him to find him playing with his finger absentmindedly.

"And we are married..." even though he mumbled it to himself I could still hear whatever he was speaking.

What's wrong with him?

Is he alright?

"Where are you going?" he asked when I got up from my place and limped towards the shore.

"We should collect some mosses or sticks or something that would give us heat in the night. The sun is going down and we may face difficulties without heat and Valerie, her body needs heat. We should keep her warm," I replied as I bent down and picked some dried twigs, leaves and everything that would help us.

"Hmm," I looked back at him to find him picking up the twigs helping me in my work.

"That should do," he said as we heaped all the twigs and branches on one place. I was just about to turn when Valerie moved her fingers. I was on my feet as I crunched down next to her holding her head on my lap.

"Valerie? Valerie?" I called her name and watched as she opened her eyes but closed it back groaning and moaning.

"Is she alright?" I heard Mr. Knights but at the moment I concentrated more on Valerie.

"Valerie can you hear me?" I asked as I held her face and rubbed her arm trying to comfort her.

"I- I can't move" her voice croaked out at the end and she started coughing.

"It's okay! It's okay," I said and felt depressed because we didn't have water to offer her.

"Where are we? Wha-What happened? Why can't I move?" her panicked filled voice reached my ear and I tried my best to calm her down. We didn't know why she couldn't move. It was possible she hit something on her head or on her body on the time of the accident or perhaps her body was simply exhausted because none of knew how we reached the island. Our body might have floated on its own to the shore and for that she might have been feeling tired. But not wanting to take a chance, I made sure to calm her down and kept her down on the sand.

She wept tremendously when she came to know about the crash and I watched as Mr. Knights offered his suit jacket to cover her body. I was grateful for it and took the jacket from him and covered her body and assured her that everything was going to be alright and we would soon be back to our respective houses.

"I want to go back home," she cried silently and I nodded patting her head and watched her falling asleep.

The sun had already set down and we sat near to the bonfire that Mr. Knights lit up trying to warm our body. The cold breeze of the sea made me shiver in my place because I hardly had any clothes covering my body. Even the fire seemed to fail against the chill breeze. My teeth chattered and I looked back at Valerie to find her sleeping soundly with the jacket covering her upper body. She was finally asleep after weeping and sobbing for hours and the fact that she still couldn't move made me worried sick.

"You okay?" I heard Mr. Knights.

I looked back at him to find him already staring at me. He seemed to be staring at me a lot since this morning and thankfully he has not even yelled or tried to abuse me in any way. In fact, even though we were in such a pathetic situation he seemed calm and quieter much to my relief. I guess the crash had drained all his energy and he doesn't even want to waste his remaining energy on me by yelling at me.

"Hmm," I replied. My teeth chattered and I felt anything but okay. It was so cold and it was getting harder for me to sit and with my broken leg I couldn't even sit comfortably for very long. And sitting next to the fire made me feel nauseous. My head was spinning and I had a sudden feeling to throw up.

Finally I laid down on the freezing sand and wrapped my arms around my body, my body shivered as it contacted with the cold sand but I had no option.

"Come over here," all of a sudden he said and I looked at him from my laying position.

He gestured me to go and sit next to him. The thought alone made me scared. He was the scariest man I had ever met in my life and it would be the last thing for me walk up to him for any help. What of he gets angry all of a sudden?

I can manage freezing in the cold but not his rage and silently I declined his offer and closed my eyes for a second and wished to fall asleep but then it was too cold.

"I see..." I heard him.

"You helped me stop my bleeding by tearing the part of your shirt and I believe I should hold responsibilities when you are feeling cold. So, I guess I should offer you my shir-,"

"No!" I jerked up from my place but then winced in pain due to the impact as I felt immense pain on my leg.

"You alright?" I head his worried voice. Although the pain was severe, I found my eyes looking his way wanting to see his face because it was the first time he was worried for me. And truly enough his face held worriness for me.

"I'm fine," I nodded at him and sat back on the sand.

"So you're stubborn too..."he spoke up and I looked at him questionably.

"Nothing!" he replied and the next moment he got up from his place and walked up to me. All the while my eyes remained trained on him and I shifted on my position when he came and sat next to me.

"Wh-?" my words were caught up in my breath as a gasp escaped my mouth when he wrapped his arms around me pulling me closer to him.

"Wha-What are you doing?" I wrestled against him and flustered by his actions tried to free myself from him but his hold was too tight for him and I felt my energy drained out.

"Relax! God you're freezing! Your body is cold as an ice," he said and Held my hand rubbing his palm on it trying to warm it.

"It's okay. I'm fin-"

"Both of us are freezing. We don't have any choice but to depend upon each other's body heat," he spoke up cutting me off in the middle and even though little weird sitting so close to him all of a sudden still I found my body giving up to his warmness.

Warmness became the necessity for me at the moment and I had no choice but to sit next to him with his arms around my body. But ... I felt little relieved now. With his body stopping the chilly

breeze from reaching my side, I felt little relieved and unintentionally leaned closer to him feeling little sleepy all of a sudden.

As sleep overtook me, I felt his big warm hands rubbing the side of my arms and I heard him whisper "You don't really seem like the kind I had imagine you to be."

Chapter 22

XAVIER

The last thing that I wanted was to end up in an Island away from home with the woman whom I loathed the most. I looked at her from under my eyelashes as she covered the stewardess using my jacket. My eyes fell on my forearm which had a cloth wrapped up stopping the blood from flowing. I could feel the muscles contracting every time I raised the same arm. And to say it hurts like hell would be an understatement and to top of that my head was throbbing and I was hungry.

I was grateful to her for helping me with my wound. I didn't have any idea why I kept staring at her when she was helping the wounded girl, covering her properly even though she trembled in cold but not even for a second she complained about it.

I hated her for ruining my life, for barging into my life unwanted and it was the fact that she married me even though I had sent her that letter irritated me even more, and it was why I was keen on not even glancing her way. I knew she was god looking through my friends in the damn wedding when they kept on complimenting about her looks but then it was the last thing I wanted to know about her.

She was undoubtedly attractive and good looking and her eyes where the most striking part of her face. Her blue eyes looked so bright yet sad. From the time, I came to know about the crash and being stuck up in the island with injured ladies, if anything I had seen then that was her helping both of us even though she was the one who was injured.

"Where were you doing?" I asked her when she returned back to us after some hours of waking up.

When I woke up in the morning, I had imagine her to be near me, sleeping in my arms as last night she was trembling and I ended up helping her by wrapping my arms around her but she was gone when I woke up. Guessing she would be nearby I sat next to the sleeping stewardess and waited for her to come back.

"I went up in search of some food but…" her face was marred with disappointment as she looked down at the girl named Valerie.

"It's okay," I told her but questioned myself internally for why I was comforting her all of a sudden.

She smiled a sad one and hurried next to Valerie stroking her hair as she opened her eyes and looked around before her eyes settled on Angela.

"Can you move now?" Angela asked and the girl bit her lower lip and shook her head no.

"I am really hungry," she croaked out as she closed her eyes and I watched as her lips trembled. Angela put her hand on her stroking her hands trying to console her.

"I searched for something that we could eat but found none," Angela sighed as she looked back at me.

"I told you…its okay," I said as I looked around.

"Wh-What about Vitaly?" we heard Valerie asking us.

Angela shook her head no and it was when Valerie started weeping once again. I looked at Angela to find her trying her best to console Valerie even though she seemed sad by the whole situation. She kept herself strong and faced it without any complaints.

The woman seemed stronger than I had actually expected.

"It's already been a day since we are stuck up in here. Do you think they might have found out about us already?" Angela asked as she sat on the shore with her arms encircling her knees as she looked towards the ocean.

"Don't worry. I'm sure my dad had already found out about it and would have left no stones unturned to search for us. We just need to be strong and more importantly Ms. Valerie seems to be depended upon you for taking care of her. As much as I feel bad to say it, but I think you'll have remain strong for her sake," I told her as I sat beside her.

"And yo-" it seemed as if I forgot what I was talking about when I stared at her. The sun rays hitting her face made her skin glow. Though marred with bruises and cuts, her features stood out with her striking blue eyes that looked towards the ocean. My eyes roamed on her face before ending on her arms. It had bruises all over it when all of a sudden something went past my mind.

Chapter 23

I remembered manhandling her back in the house when I found out about dad giving us a sudden visit. Turned out he was just checking on us and wanted to inform us about the event that was held in Paris and the honeymoon plan.

"You don't really seem the type I'd imagine," I heard myself muttering when she turned her head and looked at me.

"Sorry?" she asked and I shook my head no.

No wonder I find the phrase so true at the moment "Looks can be deceptive"

Her looks deceived me at moment and forced me think of the opposite of what I had an impression of her. Her innocent face and kind gestures to help the one in need bound me to think did she really marry me for money.

"That…" I spoke as I pointed my finger towards her arms. She looked at the direction and as she realised I was pointing towards the bruises in her arms she pulled her torn sleeves in attempts of hiding it from me.

"I didn't really mean to hurt you that badly. I was enraged that day and didn't have any idea that you were not the one who called my dad. In short, I am trying to say is…" I pursed my lips before speaking up "I am sorry. I misbehaved…" I said felt guilty as I looked at her arms. No doubt, it was an old bruise because it was already fading up.

She looked at me. Her eyes seemed to skim my face probably for any doubts before she nodded and exhaled out a deep breath.

"It's okay. I forgive you," she said and my eyes widened up in shock.

"What?" I heard myself muttering.

Is she even serious? How can see forgive a person who hurt her physically just so simply?

"I don't really like holding grudges against people. It's okay…" she said and turned her head towards the ocean sitting quietly on her spot living me with confusion and disturbed.

"I- I will make sure that…" I said indicating towards her bruises "it doesn't happen again," I completed to which she nodded.

"I hope you keep your promise Mr. Knight," she said and gave me a small smile before getting up and walking back towards Valerie.

"Mr. Knights," I muttered and it seemed I disliked the way she addressed me using my surname in place of my first name.

"What's wrong with me? Why do I feel so apologetic all of a sudden?" I muttered as I looked back at her to find her sitting next to Valerie.

"Shit! What is this that I am feeling right now?"

"Has the island got to me and my mind?" I cursed myself holding my head.

"What is that sound?" I heard some sounds and looked here and there towards the sky when all of a sudden my eyes fell on the rescue helicopter.

"Oh my god!" I heard Angela as she got up on her place waved her hands in the air trying to gain their attention.

"We are over here!" I yelled as I ran towards the open area and waved my hands furiously hurting my already wounded forearms in the process. But still it didn't stop me from yelling and waving the other hand desperately trying to gain their attention.

"Here! Over here!" I yelled and the helicopter seemed to get nearer it looked as if they noticed us and relief washed over me as I looked back towards the girls only to find Angela aiming a small piece of mirror on the helicopter's direction. It was working because the mirror shone a beam of daylight creating a flash of light that caught their attention. She succeeded in signalling them efficiently.

"Where did you get that?" I asked yelling at top of my lungs for the sounds of the helicopter blades was making it difficult to hear or speak.

Instead of replying she gestured towards the direction where I assumed she found it.

I took a sigh of relief as I leaned back on my seat inside the helicopter as I watched the medical team nursing Valerie and Angela. Valerie still couldn't move and Angela still had a fresh cut on her ankle which needed stitches but she had attention more on Valerie by the time we reached the hospital.

I was shifted on a stretcher as we were taken inside the hospital and somehow the media got the report of our crash as it surrounded me when the security team had to push them back for my safety. I had no idea where I was being taken to but I felt myself wondering where Angela was taken. Since we landed, she was taken to some other room for inspection while I was treated privately by a doctor for any internal injuries apart from the external ones with my dad following him like a lost puppy.

"How are you my son?" dad asked as he took a seat on the chair next to my bed and looked at me worriedly.

"Take a chill pill Old man! I'm perfectly fine," I said and grinned when he lowered his eyes and held his forehead.

"You nearly gave me a heart attack there," he looked as if he would break down any second.

"It was all my fault. If I had never pressured you to go on your honeymoon then this would have never happ-"

"Relax Dad! It was an accident. It was not your fault," I said and smiled at him. He looked tired and had eye bags under his eyes. It looked as if he barely slept for a moment and that made me guilty for worrying him so much.

"For the first time in my life, I thought that I lost you, son," he said which made me look his way. Dad is generally not from the people who show their emotions. But here he is sitting right beside me and the emotions are evident in his voice.

"Nay! you are not going to get rid of me so soon old man," I said trying to lighten his mood.

He smiled and patted me on my shoulder making me flinch due to injuries.

"Easy there old man, you wouldn't probably want to hurt your handsome Son more than he is" I gritted out and much to my annoyance he boomed out laughing hard.

"That's my son, always straight forward" he smirked making me fake a smile which only doubled his smirk.

The door of my room opened again and we both looked towards it to see a police officer.

"I'm sorry to disturb you but we need your statement to investigate the crash, sir," he stated.

Chapter 24

My dad ready to interrupt when I butted in to stop him "It's okay dad. Let him do his job."

I shook my heads denying him and said: "Dad this matter needs to be solved as soon as possible".

He reluctantly nodded but sat back in his place.

"Mr. Knights, how did the crash happen?"

"I don't know I was in the room on the plane alone and was doing my work on my laptop when I felt the plane shaking terribly so, when I went out of the room, the plane started to rotate and everything went blur," I truly stated.

"Hmm, Do you have any suspects on any of your rivals or enemies in this case?"

"No, I don't have any suspect upon anybody".

"How did you survive after experiencing such a terrible crash?"

"I don't know how I reached that island but I know that I wasn't going to make it to here if Angela didn't save me on time," I said remembering my first encounter with her.

"Angela?"

"She is my wife, she was also there with me on that island and she saved both of us, including Ms. Valerie, the stewardess of my plane".

"Oh, so the other patient is your wife!"

I nodded.

"Mr. Knights we need to investigate more for that we need to ask your wife some questions"

I looked at Dad and asked, "Dad where is she and how is she doing?"

"She is fine son, and she is taking rest in the other room, doctors have forbidden her to walk for some days and I would suggest that you can carry on your investigation after two or three days" dad strictly said to the officer leaving no room for an argument.

The officer nodded and turned to leave but I stopped him wanting to know about Vitaly.

"I'm afraid to inform you this, but Mr. Vitaly Pimenov was found dead by the rescue team," the officer informed and as soon as the words escaped his mouth distress and depression glided over my body thinking about it.

""What?" I managed to ask shocked with the notification.

"Wh- What are you saying?"

"Enough! I will handle it all from here officer," dad interfered as the officer nodded before taking his leave.

"Did you hear that dad? He says Vitaly is no more," I felt my heart aching in pain as I felt the soreness of losing a trusted and dear friend.

"It's Okay. Rest for a while," dad patted my hand and I shifted on my position covering myself to my chin as I kept on thinking about it.

A week passed by till I last saw Angela and I found myself wanting to see her face. Sure, her father and her brothers came to meet me within this days but I hoped Angela to come and meet me.

I don't know why but every time the door of my room opens I wish it to be Angela.

"Why am I feeling like this?" I found myself asking the question to myself as I thought about it again and again.

The doctor came in to check me and I couldn't hold it anymore within me so I blurted out "How is Angela?"

He looked at me through his notepad and said: "She is doing fine Mr. Knights and might I say that she is a strong woman."

"She indeed is!" I thought to myself.

"Why is she kept in a separate room?" I wanted to know.

The doctor looked at me and said: "Because we were asked by Mr. Brad Knights to do so".

"What?"

"Yes, we asked Mr. Knights about Mrs. Knights to be shifted to your room but he just ordered us to keep her in other room" the doctor blurted out holding his shirt's collar as though it was suffocating him.

That old man!

I glared at the doctor making him shift his position and said: "Next time ask me not my father."

He nodded and began scribbling on his notepad.

"Shift her to my room and right now!" my voice boomed in the whole room making him choke on air and he stumbled more like ran out of my room to follow my order.

I heard screeching sounds of wheels and saw that Angela was being shifted to my room in a stretcher. She was placed beside my bed. Her leg was bandaged and but she looked healthy and much better from the last time I saw her. She had hair made up in pleats as she rested next to my bed sleeping soundly, still in her hospital gown.

Still, she looked breathtaking.

"Wait! What are you thinking?" I shook my head but still failed on averting my gaze away from her.

I inhaled deeply at the sight of her and kept staring at her for I don't how many minutes or hours and soon slipped into a deep slumber. When I woke up, I looked at my right side only to find her trying hard to get up from her bed but flinching when her leg touched the floor.

"Hey! What are you doing?" I said making her look at me.

She brushed some strands of her hair behind her ear and pointed her finger towards the Bathroom.

Sighing at it I said: "You could have called the nurse or me, don't you know doctors have forbidden you to walk on that leg?" I crossed my hands over my chest.

She bit down on her lips making my eyes to follow her gesture but I shook myself out of it and got up from my bed and made my way towards her.

I reached her to where she was still sitting on her bed and scooted her up in my arms bridal style.

She left out a squeal and said: "Mr. Kni-Mr Knights what are you doing?".

Oh how terribly I wanted to hear her voice. I felt relief washed over me when I heard her Voice and I felt so nice to have her in my arms and nd what with her calling me "Mr. Knights?".

"Can't you see? I'm helping you to go to the bathroom and call me Xavier".

"Please put me down, You have an injury in your forearm and you shouldn't lift weights, you also need rest" she tried to wiggle out of my hold.

Too bad! I only tightened my hold on her and gave her a pointed look which made her stop her struggle. I liked the fact that she was still worrying about me.

I kept staring at her mesmerized by her eyes still holding her in my arms. "For your kind information my forearm is already healed and I'm fine so let me do my work," I said and tightened my hold making her eyes widen in surprise but she kept her mouth shut.

I took her inside the bathroom and kept her down on the floor. Much to my dismay, she forced me out of the bathroom and I gave her some alone time to do her business. When she was done I again scooped her up in my arms and made her sleep on her bed.

She didn't utter any words but kept staring at me.

I went back to my bed and laid down on it looking towards her when she was staring blankly at the ceiling.

"Why doesn't she just talk to me? Isn't she getting bored ?" I thought to myself.

I cleared my throat making her look at me.

She looked at me with her beautiful eyes that I forgot what I wanted to say. I found it more calming to only stare at her then to talk to her.

She never said anything while I stared at her and we both kept staring at each other lying down in our own bed.

And I began to have this feeling that I was going to be in a great trouble of fighting with myself in the future but I liked the feeling whatever she was unknowingly doing to me.

Chapter 25

Xavier

After being stuck up in that hospital for almost *two* weeks finally, we were discharged. My forearm is fully healed but I still have some raw scratches and cuts all over my body and Angela's stitches were gotten rid off and her leg seems much better now but she is still asked not to give pressure on that leg.

We are now at the airport waiting for our flight to go back home. The last two weeks were worst. That hospital food makes me want to puke to death. I wanted to go back home and ask Lucy to prepare me a nice supper. From last few months, her cooking skills have increased and she is making delicious food which I want to eat the most.

We paid a visit to Valerie to find that she was doing great. She was healing up and Angela was more than excited to hear about it from the doctors. I made sure to hire the best doctors for her treatment and paid up her bills and even decided to transfer her to her home town hospital so that she could be with her family. Everything was finally getting in place.

Just Vitaly!

His family was torn when they received the news. Both Dad and I had great difficulties to console his family and finally dad decided that he would compensate a great amount of money and even offered to look after Vitaly's younger sister until she gets married. It was a small piece of offering from our side compensating their loss but we knew it was nothing to what they had actually lost.

It was the truth. Vitaly wasn't ever coming back.

Life is going on, and from all those days I have come to know and witness many things and emotions.

But something more has happened within these two weeks.

Angela!

I have come to know some things about her. That is she's strong, she's beautiful, she talks less, she's kind and she feels other people's pain. Still, I don't get the answer for her to marry me.

When our flight was announced we made our way to our destination.

It's been two hours since we are on the plane. Angela has taken the window seat whereas I'm sitting beside reading a business magazine. I kept stealing glances at her sometimes.

The plane began to shake a little but I didn't bother because I knew it was the usual turbulence but when I looked at Angela I found her gripping the armrest tightly with her hands and eyes were closed in fear.

The sight before me clenched my heart. She was scared but still, she didn't ask for help.

She was yet to feel warm around me.

I hesitantly placed my palms over her hands and murmured "Relax it's just the turbulence"

I was afraid that she might not like me touching her that again the unexpected happened.

She gripped my hands with both her hands and didn't leave me till the turbulence was gone.

I liked it, though.

When we reach home we were attacked by Lucy hugging us and screaming and sobbing. I could see that she has grown fond of Angela more than me. She hugged her and kissed her.

It was obvious that everyone in the world knew about our dreadful crash and Lucy wasn't oblivious to it. I made my way towards the house and I knew Angela and Lucy were following me.

Lucy kept her asking her about her condition and I just rolled my eyes annoyed that Lucy wasn't leaving me and Angela alone.

I stood in the living room while I saw Lucy ranting with Angela. I was waiting for her to leave. But when Lucy stopped her babbling and went towards the other room I thought I got my chance but my chance was thrown out of the window when Angela went past me towards her room leaving me there cold and alone.

Just great!

I too went to my room and took a long warming shower relaxing. I laid on my bed and stared blankly at the ceiling.

I never said, "Thank you" to Angela for saving my life.

I grinned and got up the bed thinking that I found a topic to talk to her. I got out of my room and made my way towards her room and took deep breaths before knocking only to find no one answering. I abruptly opened her room to see no one in the room.

"Where did she go?," I thought to myself.

I heard someone laughing and talking and I followed the sounds to our Living only to find a male sitting really close to Angela much to my dislike and holding her hands.

I felt a bit of jealousy washing over me at the sight but I shrugged it off and made my face stoic and went towards them.

"Why the hell am I feeling jealous?," I thought to myself.

I cleared my throat making that stupid male to take his dirty paws away from Angela's hand and they both stood up seeing me.

"What's going on?," I asked casually raising an eyebrow.

"Mr. Knights meet Dustin Sterlings my best friend and Dustin he is Mr. Knights" Angela introduced us both smiling at that Dusty boy.

"What the hell? She can call him using his name but not to me? Mr. Knights...Mr. Knights," I mocked to myself.

That Dusty boy smiled at Angela and forwarded his hand to me for a shake.

Chapter 26

"Hey! I'm Dustin Sterlings and I came here to check on you two because I heard about that crash and I was worried," he said the last part looking at Angela to which she just smiled.

Nevertheless, I took his hand for a shake and said "Hello Dusty" and squeezed his hand pressuring it too much.

He took his hand out of my grip and scowled looking at his now sore hands and said "it's Dustin not Dusty"

'Ha! take that, he is no match for me' I smirked at him evilly and replied: "yeah it's same Dusty Dustin whatever. "

I knew I was being rude but I wanted to show him his place. Angela looked at us with bewilderment but said nothing as usual.

That Dusty boy huffed and said "Bye Angela I will meet you later, I think your husband is not in the mood to talk"

Later? what does he mean by later? Will they meet again? Oh, he'll no!

He has the audacity to hug my wife right before my eyes letting me grit my teeth in annoyance. I was sure that I would've powdered my teeth if he would have hugged her for more seconds and even whispered something in her ears making her giggle.

"What the fucking hell?"

He left her and looked at me "Goodbye Mr. Knights"

"Bye!," I hissed out irritated.

When he was gone I saw Angela walking towards her room. I was very angry and I wanted her to confront her but I was stopped by a loud screeching pitch.

Angela stopped walking and looked behind me. I followed her to see Priscilla or was it Claudia whatever her name was running towards me pushing a horrified Lucy out of her way making her spin around and she held her head saying "Oh, dear"

Priscilla came running towards me with her arms wide open having the intention to hug me "Baby are you alright? Are you alive? Did you survive that crash?"

Of course stupid woman I'm alive. Can't she see I'm alive and standing right before her eyes?

I looked at Angela to see her shaking her heads and she turned to leave for her room.

"What the fucking freaking hell? No reaction?"

This led my annoYeahnce to anger and I knew who was the person on whom I could get my anger on.

Priscilla.

"Stop right there" my voice boomed with anger making Angela stop and look towards us with wide eyes.

"Get the fuck out of my house Priscilla and never come the fuck back get out! Get out!"

Her eyes teared up and she said: "Wh-What did I do?"

"Get out!," I shouted making her flinch at my tone and run away again spinning Lucy who just recovered her state making her say "Oh, dear not again. "

I looked at Angela to see her giving me a fearful look.

Oh, damn!

Is she afraid of me??

Before I could say anything to her she dashed up to the stairs and towards her room.

I sighed in annoyance and facepalmed myself.

Great.Just fucking great.

It's been two days since that stupid incident which took place in my house. Angela didn't come out her room since two days. She even asked Lucy to bring her food to her room.

I so desperately want to see her face.

Since Last two days my anger level has increased making me to scare every single living being around me and it was why, my employees in my office tried their best to avoid me.

I'm frustrated because I can't comprehend my feelings.

I hate her because she married me but at same time I hate myself for hating her because it is cleared that I'm attracted to her.

No. I have to keep my feelings in bay. Feelings will definitely ruin me. I looked out of my office window to see a busy street.

"Is it because I'm sexually frustrated?" I asked to myself forming an excuse for feeling such way.

"Of course!" my face lit up as I spoke to myself "I'm just sexually frustrated. When was the last time I had sex with someone? Probably since the time we went to Paris. Yes! That's it. It is the only reas- Oh what the fuck am I even saying?" I huffed at the lame excuse and leaned against the desk. From then only I knew that I was totally screwed. I could never have sex with any other female for my rest of my life as I realized the problem.

But first I need to find out the answer to the question to why Angela married me and I knew who can give me the answer.

Dad.

I went to his house which was at the other side of the city and it took me to drive four hours nonstop. I reached his house and went in.

I always had the keys of his house.

As soon as I got in I began to shout "Dad, Dad!"

"Old man! Hey Old man!"

"What got up to your ass and what did I do to get such a lovely visit from my one and only son?" Dad asked sarcastically coming down from the staircase.

I huffed and crossed my arms around my chest.

"I'm here to get my answers Dad," I said sounding serious.

He raised an eyebrow and went to the bar and poured himself some wine.

"What answers?" Dad asked innocently.

"Don't try to act smart Dad, you are not," I said making him choke on his drink.

"I guess you are right Son because I wasn't smart enough when I had you as my son," he smirked making me to roll my eyes.

"Dad why did Angela marry me?," I asked being serious.

His expression changed to a serious one and he kept his glass down on the table "What do you mean by why she married you? Off course she married you because I searched her for you" he averted his gaze away from me.

"That's the half part of your story and I know you are hiding something so just spill it out," I scoffed.

"Fine I kinda forced her to marry you" Dad replied in one breath.

"What! Forced her how?," I asked being stunned.

He rubbed his neck nervously and sighed "You see her family was going through a financial problem with her father being a heart patient and that time it was really urgent for her to arrange money for her father's heart transplant so, I kinda kept a deal for her that if she would marry you I would help her with money" he shrugged his shoulders like it was not a big deal.

"Dad you are unbelievable," I shouted making him to cringe his face.

"How can you force someone to marry a stranger?," I couldn't believe this.

"Damn," I cursed and ran my hands on my hair and ran out of his house.

I drove off from his house back to my house.On the way I stopped my car and banged my hand on the steering wheel in frustration.

"Damn DamnDamn," I wanted to scream.

Shit! I cursed myself for treating Angela so badly.Damn I should have known.

It's my entire fault.I even chose to hurt her not only mentally but even physically when she was innocent.I wanted to scream.I shouldn't have assumed things.I thought I was the victim in this marriage when in reality she is the one who went through so much.

I'm not a human.How can I hurt someone so innocent?

My heart hurts recalling what I did to her.That day in that restaurant when Kim and Stephanie were humiliating her I knew it was too much but still I didn't stop them and when she stood up for herself and left not even glancing my way somehow I felt proud of her.I was the one who sent that driver to get her.He even informed me that he found her sitting alone in the rain.

I wanted to say sorry to her but I couldn't because I felt she deserved it.

No one deserves such treatment.

I am feeling more hurt because though I insulted, humiliated, tortured her she never confronted me.

She never would reply me back or never would fight with me for torturing her.

"Shit! Shit! Shit" no wonder she isn't comfortable around me.

I have to sort this out.I have to ask for forgiveness.I have to solve this matter.

I ignited the engine and drove off back to my house.When I reached home I was welcomed with the aroma of delicious food.

May be Lucy is preparing Dinner.

I went towards the kitchen and instead of Lucy I found Angela cooking and humming a song.

The sight before me was heavenly.So calming and homier.She cooked skillfully and hummed a song while I saw Lucy smiling at her and cleaning the kitchen.

I felt so terrible.

I'm sick of myself.

Angela stopped her humming and looked at me with her wide eyes.She got nervous and kept the utensil in which she was cooking aside and began to walk towards her room.But I ran towards her and stopped her by holding her hand.

She gasped and looked at me fearfully.

I moved my hands to her face to push away a strand of hair which was falling on her face but as if she thought I was going to hit her or something she flinched away when she saw my hand.

My heart ached at the thought that she was scared of me.

I would never hit her not intentionally though.

I looked at her feeling really sad and maybe as if she saw my pain in my eyes she did something which was really unexpected.

She took hold of both my hands and looked at me with her warm and beautiful blue orbs and said "Mr.Knights are you alright?"

Am I alright?

She is still thinking about me? What about her pain? Mine is nothing before her pain.

"No," I replied.

I wanted to end this one and for all.

Chapter 27

She just looked at me and her eyes seemed to be trying to look through my soul to know what was going on with me.

I took hold of her hand and pulled her with me towards the front door.

"Mr.Knights where are we going?," she askedme.

"Outside.I want to talk about something with you," I whispered not able to trust my voice.

I wanted to cry but that was against my man ego.

I took her towards the lawn and made her stand in the middle.

She looked at me with a confused look.I wanted to say so much to her but my lips were like sealed.

No words formed in my mouth and I began to take deep intakes.

"Mr.Knight?," she spoke to me in a soft tone.

"Ange-Angela I wa-wanted t-to a um uh," I stammered not knowing where to start from.

She encouraged me with her eyes to continue.

"I'm Sorry," I blurted out finally.

She bit down on her lips not understanding anything.

"Angela I'm sorry I truly am.I am sorry because of the terrible things I did with you.I assumed that you married me because of my wealth so I only found the way to let out my anger by torturing you.I thought that I was the victim in this marriage but never knew that you were the one who was the real victim.Angela I am really sorry I am not a human."By the end I knew that my eyes were glassy so I looked away not wanting to let her see me.

"I wasn't aware of your family condition and about your father's health I just knew today from dad and I am feeling really terrible for the things I did with you.I am ashamed of myself.So I guess forgiving me is out of the line."

"I know you were doing this for your father but you don't need to do all this," I said truthfully and looked into her eyes "If you want we," I stopped to take a deep breathe.I didn't want to say that.Those words were hurting my lips.I never wanted to say that to her.But maybe hearing it coming out of my mouth would make her free.Maybe she would get her freedom that she deserved.And even Freedom from me.

"We could file a divorce and you know You will get your freedom," It was somehow killing me inside to speak out those words to her.I was hundred percent sure that she was going to agree on this and would go away from my life like nothing ever happened, forgetting everything.But still a part of me wanted to let her disagree on this.I didn't want to loose her.And the feeling that I would no longer be a part of her life, her name was killing me inside.

For five minutes she just kept on looking at me as though trying to process everything in her mind and when she recovered she pursed her lips and looked elsewhere hiding her face from my sight.

"Is that what you want?," she askedin a low voice.

Her voice told me that she didn't like the idea of getting a divorce and somehow I began to feel a positive feeling build up inside me.

"I was talking about your feelings.What do you want to do? I am going to agree on whatever your decision will be," I told her but my traitor heart prayed the lords to make her to stay with me.

For minutes she stood there silently and I could feel anxiety filling up inside me because of her silence.

I chose to break the silence.

"I am not good at saying sorry Angela," I sighed and she looked towards me with questioning eyes.

"I am saying all this because I want you to forgive me even if it costs a divorce I will be more than happy to give you what you want.If this doesn't satisfy you then maybe…," I tried to think of something."Maybe you could hit me or slap to feel better.I always do this.I always tend to hurt someone when I am really angry.I do feel relaxed after that but I do feel bad for the person who suffered my wrath," I told her philosophy and the look that she gave me made me nervous as if I got a 'F' in my examination report card.

"Mr.Knights hurting someone in exchange of getting relief isn't right and it isn't fair.It will only lead to more pain and shallowness," she said and smiled.A genuine smile.It was the first time I saw her smiling at me and it was also the first time that I was able to notice her dimples which formed when she smiled.So cute!

I searched for any falseness or anger in her eyes but found none.She was pure and kind.

"If my words are going to sooth your pain and your feelings then I will say it, Mr.Knights I forgive you," she said and smiled even more her eyes twinkling.

"I forgive you for everything you did to me," she said and somehow I felt as though a huge weight was off my shoulders.I closed my eyes and tried to register every word of her which was now healing my pain.

"Why?," I asked still not opening my eyes.

"Because you realize your mistake and you are here, aren't you Mr.Knights?," she asked .

I nodded and she continued "Realizing and apologizing for your mistake is the biggest step to expiation and after knowing about your Remorse if I don't forgive you then I will be the biggest fool in this century," she said and giggled.

I opened my eyes and watched her smiling at me.No falseness or regret in her eyes.Finally I smiled back at her and as in instinct I pulled her to my chest to hug her.

She was stiff for some minutes but finally warmed up to me.I smiled because her being in my arms felt so right.I inhaled deeply and felt like it was a dream which I was experiencing right now and I never want this dream to over.

"Thank you," I whispered to which she just hummed.

After some minutes she began to push away from me and I reluctantly let her go.She pushed her golden locks behind her ears and bite her lip.

A habit of her when she was filled with anxiety or was nervous.

"So, can we start everything from the beginning?," I asked hoping that she would say yes.

She looked at me nodded her head.

Relief washed over me and I said "So, how about if we start from friendship?"

I held my hands out for her to shake and said "Hi I'm Xavier Knights and um aa uh I am your husband."

Her eyes widened and she laughed loud holding her stomach.Her laughter filled my ears and I smiled seeing her laugh.

I wanted to be the reason of her every smile and laugh and I vowed to myself that I will do and go to any extent to just see a smile on her beautiful face.

"Hey! What? I am not good at greetings," I said and she stopped her laughing and looked at me with amusement.

"That I can see. Anyways Hi I'm Angela car- uh Knights and I'm your wife," she said and shook my hand with hers.

"I see you are quite not acquainted with your surname Mrs.Knights?," I mocked her.

"I'm working on it Mr. Knights," she said cheerfully.

I felt so happy and relieved.

"To the new beginning," I cheered in my mind.

After my confession in that lawn me and Angela went inside the house for Dinner.I also found out that it was Angela who was cooking from these last months not Lucy.

We were eating our Dinner when Angela said "Mr.Knights I still don't understand.If you look at it then I still did marry you for your money."

I kept my knife and fork aside and said "I already knew you were going to speak me about that. "

"Look Angela you only agreed to marry because my father was ready to give you the money in return, you don't have to feel guilty because you did this all this for money, No! you did this all to save your father's life and your family and I was the one who alleged you for being a gold digger uh sorry for the inappropriate word haha um so that's it and off discussion.You don't need to feel guilty."

Somehow I too didn't find my answer reasonable.I was confused with myself.Why did I forgive her? Was it because of sympathy for what she went through for her family or was it mine own selfishness?

"But," she tried to reason with me butI cut her off "No buts Angela and yeah we are never going to talk about this any more okay?," I asked her raising an eyebrow.

She didn't reply but just kept looking at me "Angela Do you understand?," I asked again.

"Yes-Yes," she replied with a weak smile and continued eating.

"Angel," I uttered.

She looked at me almost immediately "Yo-You are an amazing cook," I coughed out and looked here and there.When I looked at her she smiled and said "Thank you."

When we were done we want to our own rooms.When we separated at the stair case she called me "Mr.Knights."I turned back towards her and waited for her to speak.She smiled and said "Mr.Knights Good night."

Though I didn't like her calling me "Mr.Knights" still I gave her a smile and said "Good Knight Angel," I whispered Angel to myself and went inside my room grinning like an Idiot.

I jumped on my bed and folded my hands below my head and whispered "God what is she doing to me?"

The days went by and Knowing Angela or would I say Angel was the best part of my life.The more I knew her the more I grew to like her.She was different.She was very simple and Kindhearted

Person though not talkative but somehow I was beginning to know what was going on, with her heart or mind.

I liked being with her.Every day I would wait for the day to get over so that I could finally go back home and see her face.My anger issue somehow began to decrease much to my employee's relief.

Whenever I see her smile my heart beat starts to raise its speed.Whenever I was in angry mood only seeing her face calmed me.I knew that somewhere deep down in my heart I have grown fond of her romantically but I am not ready to accept it so easily because last time I was betrayed and I don't want my heart to get hurt again.

So I maintained my distance with her.

Every day I would come back home only to be greeted with her warm smile and the aroma of her delicious food.

What does a man want more in his life?

I would tell her everything like a friend about my day's schedule and the things I did when I was a kid.She enjoyed listening to me every day after our Dinner.

Today I was really tired.I had to attend two to three meetings continuously.Now I just want to go back home to Angel.

I smiled to myself on the name "Angel."I have grown used to this name.Somehow I have started calling her "Angel" and she didn't even have any problem in me calling her that.The suited her well and I liked calling her "Angel" more than "Angela."

I drove back towards my house when on my way I saw a florist shop.She told me one day that she loved white Orchids.I never gave her anything in return of what she did to me so I thought of buying some

Orchids for her.

She would love that.

I bought some white Orchids for her and made my way towards my house.I was grinning like an Idiot.

What would she do seeing the flowers?

Would she kiss me? Definitely not.

Would she hug me? Not a chance.

Let's find out.

Chapter 28

I made my way towards the main door and opened it using my keys.I went inside the house only to find no one in there.I thought she might be in kitchen but she wasn't.

I searched her everywhere but a noise got my attention.There was a crash sound and it was coming from a room near to our store room.I slowly walked towards it and what I heard made my heart clench.

Sounds of someone moaning?

There was a female sound and as well as a male sound.I began to think about the impossibilities.

"Angel," I thought.

Was it Angel? My Angel?

My heart shattered into pieces and the pain which I felt in my heart wasunexplainable.My eyes began to get watery and I could feel rage burning inside me.

Sure, I did say her that she could enjoy her life but that was a long ago and I thought it was all sorted after I asked her to forgive me.

Doesn't she have any feelings for me? Not even slightly.I looked at the flowers which was in my hand and threw it away in anger.I began to see red and I just wanted to go inside that room and whoever that man was, I just wanted to kill him and punish her.

My breaths were coming out in shorts and I knew it was possible for me to kill someone which was not the option.I controlled my emotions and left their room and began to take long strides to get out of the house as soon as possible.When I reached the main door I opened it with so much force that it opened with a loud bang and somehow who was standing outside stumbled upon me.

My heart beat began to fasten and I knew who it was from the tingles I got while touching the person.

Angel.

I held her arms to support her from falling and looked at her face with my watery and wide eyes.

Angel?

What the fucking hell?

"Mr.Knights uh uh I was just," she uttered her face was red.

If she was here then who was in that room? I thought.

"Angel what were you doing here I thought you were inside," I gestured with my fingers.I was flabbergasted.Moreover I was shocked and surprised seeing her outside.

Relief washed over me when I knew she wasn't in that fucking room.

"Angel what were you doing?," I asked scratching my head.

"Uh I thought to go out for a walk because it was a lovely day and I thought I should give you some space," she said twisting her fingers nervously.

"Give me space?" What does that mean? I asked puzzled.

"You know I mean uh I didn't want to disturb you," she said looking everywhere but my eyes.

I held her chin and made her to look at my eyes. "What disturb me Angel?"

"I heard everything and I thought I should give you some space," she said her eyes getting watery "So I went out for a walk."

Realization hit me hard and I understood what she meant.

Oh, god, she thought I was in that room with some other woman?

Doesn't she know that I have left it all from long days back?

And here I was thinking that she was in that room.

How stupid of me.

She can't do that.She can never do that to me.

I wanted to dance at the thought that she wasn't in that room.

"I thought yo- uh you were I mean," she bite her lips and I just felt like wanting to kiss her senseless at her innocence.She was so naive.God what will I do with her?

"NO" my voice boomed making her eyes widened.

I sighed and rubbed my forehead.God I was beginning to get a headache.

"I wasn't in that room and how can you even think like that," I asked rudely but soon regretted when I saw her painfully biting her lips to stop herself from crying.

I sighed and used my fingers to free her lips from her teeth.

"Don't do that," I said.

I mentally kicked myself for shouting at her and thinking that she could do such terrible thing to me.

"I'm sorry, I shouldn't have shouted at you," I said apologetically using my soft tone.

I knew that I have to handle her with soft words and tone if I wanted her to be with me.She was like a glass, if not handled properly and with care then it might break.

"Angel I'm sorry and next time don't assume things," I said the last part more to myself.

I took her hands and pulled her inside closing the door "Now let's she who is it in our house doing "it," I doubled quoted in the air making Angel smile.

We went to that room still hearing moaning sounds.

God it was embarrassing.

I looked at Angel to see her face flushed and she looked so cute biting her lips.

"Don't do that," I whispered to her making her stop her assault with her lips.

I took a deep breath and knocked at the door.Soon the sound stopped and when someone opened the door our eyes were like ready to fall out of its sockets and we both shouted at the same time.

LUCY?

What the freaking fucking hell?

I sat on the sofa and threw my head on the sofa.I was tired.

We found out that it was Lucy and her husband who came Italy all the way to meet her or to say s***w her.

Ew gross!

I sighed and closed my eyes.

After some minutes I felt someone touching my forehead. I opened my eyes to find Angel.

"What are you doing?," I asked holding her hands.

"Ssh Relax I know you are tired, just close your eyes and let me massage your head," she said in her soft tone.

"You don't need to -" my words stopped in mid sentence when she closed my eyes using her hands and began to massage my head with her delicate fingers.

I leaned into her touch feeling relaxed and great. A soft moan came out of my months unknowingly and my eyes began to become heavy.

When I was just about to slip to a deep slumber I heard her whisper in my ears "Thank you for the flowers Mr. Knights."

I smiled and found myself in heaven.

Chapter 29

Today I have decided to take a leave from my office and complete all my pending works from my home. I have lots of work to finish and now I don't even have the time to eat.

I sighed and continued to do my work in silence. Firstly, I was frustrated because I have been working from early morning and now it's afternoon. Secondly, I couldn't enjoy my leave with Angel. She did bring my lunch to my room but that was the only a short period of time when I could talk or enjoy with her.

There was a knock on my door and Angel peeped her head inside the door asking me if she could come in.

"You don't need to ask me, come in," I said still busy with my work.

"Sorry, if I am not disturbing, I wanted to ask you something," she said little nervously and as well as with excitement evident in her voice.

"Hmm, yeah?," I was so indulged in my work that I just hummed in response to let her know that I was listening.

"Actually today is my friend's you know Du----," I was so indulged in my work that I couldn't hear her clearly.I was unmindful while she spoke.

"So can I?," she asked nervously.

"What?," I asked stuffing a paper in my mouth and arranging my files.

She cleared her throat making me, to look at her.

"Oh, shit! I didn't hear anything that she told me," I thought to myself.

"Can I?," she askedagain and I just laughed nervously and rubbed the back of my neck using the pen that I was holding.

"God what did she ask me?," I asked myself.

"Yeah! Sure ha-ha no need to ask," I said not even knowing what she asked .

"Really? Thank you so much," she beamed with happiness ran out of my room.

Oh, boy! What did I get myself into?

But I hope I don't regret my decision of saying yes to her.

I sighed and continued with my work.

It was now 6:45 in the evening when my work finally finished.

I stretched my hands above my shoulders and sighed muttering "Finally."

Now I could enjoy some quality time with Angel.I grinned and walked out of my study room switching off the lights.I was just taking the first step of the stair when the doorbell rang.

Lucy was busy in the kitchen so I shouted "It's okay I got it."

I made my way towards the door and opened the door to see the only person whom I hated the most with all my guts, standing there and grinning like a fool.

Dustin Sterling.

I just wanted to bang the door in his face.Stupid! Idiot!

"Hi Mr.Knights, Good evening" he chirped making my ear drums to bleed.

What's with him chirping?

"Good evening Dusty," I forced a smile but grinned when I saw him cringing his face at his new name.

"It's Dustin not Dusty, anyways where is Angie?" he askedhis voice raising.

"Angie?" He fucking nicknamed my wife.

I was ready to break his nose when we heard clicking of heels coming from the stairs.

I turned around to see the most gorgeous girl in the world standing right before my eyes wearing a deep green sequin dress with long sleeves and high heels.Her eyes popped out with her minimum but gorgeous make up.Her scars in her leg were long gone.Her long legs were in display because the dress only reached her mid-thigh making me groan.

My heart began to pound vigorously against my rib cage wanting to free itself and I found the world stop around myself.The only thing I saw at that moment was her.Only her.

There were no words to describe such beauty.She smiled making my breath hitched. I was flabbergasted.I was dumbstruck.

I never knew that there was a bold side of my sweet and simple Angel.

I was sure that my jaw was dropped to the floor.

She came towards me and asked "What's going on?"

I was still speechless.

Dusty boy replied "Nothing we were just talking."

"Oh, so let's go?," she asked .

Wait! Go? Go where? And with whom?

With this Dusty boy?

Oh, no.

"Go where?," I asked finally finding my voice.

"I asked you right? That today is Dustin's birthday and he is taking me with him to a club," she said.

Oh, no! she askedme about going out with him.Oh, Shit! Bloody fucking Shit!

Not even in his dreams he could touch my Angel or even take her to a club.

Chapter 30

I stopped my little ranting which was going on in my head and tried to stop her from going with him but my voice was lost in the air when I saw her already sitting in his stupid Lamborghini-Aventador and speeding away towards the driveway.

What the hell?

I closed the door and went to the living room and sat on the sofa.

"It's okay," I thought.

"What will happen? Just a stupid birthday party in some club," I tried to reason.

"They will just cut the cake and have dinner and come back," I thought laughing nervously.

"Cakes? Dinner? Club?," I stood on my feet realizing and bolted towards my room.

In less than fifteen minutes I got ready and took my Mercedes and drove off to that stupid club.I knew where that jerk would have taken her.

After 20 minutes I reached the club and went in.Some girls were coming out of the club wearing too short clothes and smiled at me seductively, displaying their cleavage.

I huffed at them and pulled my leather jacket in annoYeahnce.I was wearing a white V neck Polo slim fit shirt with my Black leather Jacket and blue ripped Jeans.I entered the club and directly went towards the VIP zone.

I found a large crowd of people grinding and dancing with each other with the beat.But my eyes were searching for only one person.I looked everywhere searching for her but found her nowhere.That Dusty boy was also not visible.

I knew I was in the right place.I averted my gaze towards the bar and finally found them.A random guy was forcefully making Angel drink some alcohol.

The sight made me really angry and I clenched my fists in anger.I stormed to them and ripped that guy away from her.

"Hey what's your problem dude back off, can't you see we are enjoying" he smelled of alcohol and his voice was hoarse.

Bloody jerk.

I looked at Angel to see her head down on the counter of the bar.

How dare he? He did this to her?

I gripped his collar in my hands and shoved him to the counter furiously shouting on his face "Stay the fuck away from my wife" my voice was dead and I was really furious.

He raised his hands in surrender and I shoved him backwards making him stumble on the floor.

I grabbed Angel's hand and dragged her out of the club.She stumbled in her feet beside me making her to lean against my shoulder.

She was clearly drunk.

I sighed and rubbed my face with my hands and balanced her holding her arms.She looked at me through her eyelashes and grinned mischievously.

Great!

I shook her shoulders and asked "How many drinks did you have?"

"Hann? What?," she asked cutely.

I inhaled deeply and asked again "How many drinks did you have?"

" Oh, she raised her hands and counted using her fingers 1...2...5...3" and shrugged saying "Dunno."

I face palmed myself and grabbed her hands "we are going home okay," I said and dragged her.

"Hey wait! I swear," she hiccupped "I didn't drink of my own, they made me," she whined.

"I know I saw everything, now come on," I took her to my car and led her in and put her seats belts on.

I went to my side and drove off to the driveway.

In the middle of the road she began to shout "Ahh stop the car! stop the car!" which made me to apply break on my car stopping it abruptly with a screeching sound.

"Why? What happened?," I asked.

She looked at me and smiled mischievously.Then she undid her seat belt and slowly leaned towards me.My heart beats raised and I bent towards the window thinking what's wrong with her.

She came incredibly close to my face and held my face with her hands making me to look straight into her eyes.I closed my eyes thinking that she was going to Kiss me or something but when I felt nothing I opened my eyes to see her leaning towards my ears and brushing her cheeks unknowingly with mine making goose bumps forming on my body.

She breathed out a small warm air into my ears and I held her waist while she whispered"I don't want to go back home" and she kissed my ears softly making my breath hitch and pulled away in a lightning speed grinning.

I was shocked and I felt my heart beat pounding wildly.Before I could say anything she jumped out of the car which made me to come back to earth.

"Angel," I shouted and got out of my car following her.

She ran on the pavement away from the road much to my relief and went towards a shop.I followed her into the shop, searching for her.I saw her on the counter whispering to the lady and pointing towards me and then she dashed pushing me away again to the road.

I saw her holding something when she ran away.

I turned around to follow her but was stopped when the lady shouted "Hey young man, you need to pay for the thing that she took."

"What? Oh, man," I payed her and came to know that she bought some beer and asked the lady to take the money from me.

Chapter 31

I ran out of the shop and saw her running towards a bench and sitting on it, gulping down her drink.I ran to her and snatched the can.

"Hey, you will puke if you drink that," I said gesturing the can.

She shrugged and drank from the other can.I sighed and sat besides her sipping from the can I was holding.

"Come on let's go home," I said giving her my hand to hold.

She gave a look to my hand then shook her head "Nooonaaa noooo," she sang.

"Angel!," I glared narrowing my eyes and crossing my hands on my chest.

"Mr.Knights!," she mimicked me and crossed her hands around her chest making my eyes to follow her action.

I kicked myself mentally and coughed nervously.

It's not the time to think naughty Xavier!

"Noooo," she sang.

I smiled and took her hand and said "Yes."

"Catch me," she sang and went to the pedestrian crossing and leaned on to the signal post. There were already some ladies standing there and were looking at her while some men were giving her lustful look.

I went to her and wrapped my arms around her waist balancing her.She giggled and put her head on my chest. The other ladies awed on our gesture while the men glared at me.

Angel looked towards them and giggled.

"What are you looking at hu? Never seen a drunk woman?" as soon as she said that everyone turned their head to the other side.

I turned her around and scooted her up in arms bridal style and walked towards our car.

She tried to wiggle and began to swing her legs singing "put me down out me down. "

"No. ," I said sternly.

"Ok! I won't run I promise," she whined giving me her puppy dog eyes.

I huffed and said "Fine."

I let her down and she giggled holding my arms.I held her hands and started to walk but she stopped me and turned me around.Then she wrapped her hands around my neck and came close to me exhaling warm breaths on my neck making my hair in my neck to stand.

"Angel?," I whispered.

She hushed me by putting her finger on my lips."Sssh," she whispered .

"You are very handsome," she said in one breath making me confuse.

"Ha?," I asked.

She chuckled and said "You are very handsome."

I choked on air and I could no longer feel my heart beat.

She finds me handsome?

Thank God.

"You are very beautiful," I whispered back to her making her giggle.

"Liar," she sang.

"Hey, am not lying you really are," I said smiling.

"Really?," she askedmaking her eyes wide like a kid.

So adorable.

"Really," I answered.

I held her arms and unwrapped her hands around me "Now let's go back home.You are drunk."

"Hmmm but first let me do this," she said with a mischievous glint in her eyes.

"Do wha-" my question was left in the air when I found myself in water.I got up and rubbed my face to get rid of the water from my eyes.

She freaking pushed me into the fountain.

God.

She was laughing holding her stomach and tears were visible at the end of her eyes.

"Angela Knights!," I shouted crossing my hands on my chest still in the fountain.She stopped her laughing but started again rolling on the floor.

"Ha ha very funny," I mocked.

Her laughter soon died and she wiped her tears "So-Sorry I'm so Sorry."

I raised an eyebrow and glared at her.She gave me an amused look and held her hands out for me to take.

"Two can play this game Mrs.Knights," I thought forming an evil plan in my head.

I thought and grinned evilly.

I took her hands and pulled her inside the fountain making her all soaked and wet.

I started laughing and felt my stomach hurt from so much laughing.But soon my laughter died when I felt hands on my hips which moved to my chest.

Angel was all soaked yet she looked so sexy.Water was dripping down her face and her lips were attracting me looking glossy and red.

She wrapped her hands around my neck and pulled me close to her making me to hold onto her waist.

"That was not right Mr.Knights," she whisperedseductively making me groan.

"Ange-," I was again cut off by her fingers and she started to trail her fingers on my lips.

She looked at me with her beautiful blue orbs and leaned towards me.

"Xavier," she whisperedmaking my eyes widen and my heart skipped a beat.

It was the first time she called me using my name.Damn! It felt so right.I felt tingles going down my nerves and I shivered in a very good way.

So sexy.

I groaned and pulled her extremely close to me.I leaned in and finally I was able to touch her lips with mine.

It was so soft just like I have always imagined.I found myself being in paradise.I started to kiss her with all my passion and urgency.I was afraid that it was a dream which might break in any second. I held her face and pulled her closer.I kissed her with all my power.

I tilted my head and kissed her more passionately.I wanted her No I needed her.Her lips were magic.It did the things to me which I can't ever explain and I just couldn't get enough of her.Soon she wrapped her hands around my neck and kissed me back.Her lips were warm, soft and inviting.I trailed my hands on her back and pulled away for air but again pulled her even more closer and kissed her with all my might.I was hot and I knew she was too.She moaned against my lips and I

felt myself in thin air.Everything and everyone around us disappeared and I only enjoyed the moment feeling her lips and her body closed to mine.

Soon I felt her stop and I slowly pulled away.She leaned her head on my shoulder and her eyes were closed probably being tired.

She slept kissing me?

Amazing!

I smiled and pushed her hair away from her face and lifted her on my shoulder and walked towards my car.I slowly put her on her seat and went towards mine and drove back towards my "OUR" house.I looked towards her to see her still sleeping and a smile formed onto my face seeing her pout in her sleep.

We reached back home and I had to help her to get back to her room.I called Lucy from her quarter and asked her to change her wet clothes.

I too took a shower and changed into a trouser and vest.I went to her room and sat beside her in her bed.She looked absolutely beautiful when the moon light reflected the mirror and fell on her face.She was already changed to a comfortable shirt and her makeup was off from her face.

I pushed back the strand of hair away from her face and kissed her forehead gently.

The things you do to me Angela.

Angel.

My Angel.

You are only mine.

You are going to be mine.

Only mine.

Forever and ever.

"I am going to make you mine very soon and for forever.You will be mine.Your body and soul, everything will be only mine Mrs. Angela Knights," I whispered in her ear making her sigh.

I kissed her forehead one last time and went towards my room.

I couldn't sleep the whole night thinking about her.

Because a woman with blue eyes with golden hair raided my mind the whole night.

Chapter 32

Angela

I woke up only to be closing my eyes and holding my head with my hands because of a headache.

Oh, God! My head hurts.

"Wait! What happened?"

I groaned rubbing my forehead with my fingers to lessen the pain, but it was of no use.I was thirsty and I wanted to drink water.

As if god heard me someone held me a glass of water in front of my face.Without seeing who it is I just grabbed the glass and Advil which was kept on the nightstand and gulped it down my throat.

"Feeling better?" Someone asked and I had to look up to see who it was.

"Mr.Knights? it's you?," I whispered my voice hoarse.I cleared my throat and looked here and there "What happened?"

"What happened? Do you really not remember?" he askedraising an eyebrow.

I groaned and said "I mean what happened last night? I can't remember anything," I said and his face became serious.

He sat down on my bed beside me and said: "How much do you remember?"

I rubbed my forehead and tried to remember "Let's see, uh I went to the party and then everyone started cheering then Dustin went away with some guy and then I went to seat on a couch there.The-then some guy came to me and asked me to dance with him," I groaned and drank another gulp of water from the glass.

"Then what happened?" Mr.Knights asked sounding curious.

"He didn't seem like a good guy so I denied him and went towards the bar to which he followed me and then he started to flirt with me and forced me to drink alcohol."

"You shouldn't have gone there," Mr.Knights said his lips forming into a thin line.

"Yeah but what happened next I don't remember anything,," I said and I think I saw a mischievous glint in Mr.Knights's eyes.

He coughed and said in a husky voice "You don't remember?"

"No?" My answer came out more like a question.

"Oh, you don't remember? How can it be possible?" he said with a sad tone and held my hands with his.

"Angel, Last night was supposed to be the most memorable night of our life and sweetheart you forgot everything?"

"Sweetheart?," I repeated questionably to him.

"Yes, sweetheart you said you liked when I call you sweetheart, do you remember now?" he asked .

My eyes were big and I shook my head negatively not knowing what to say.

He sighed and squeezed my hands saying "Last night, I went to the club and saw that guy forcefully trying to get over you.I gave him a uh piece of my mind and grabbed your hand and dragged you out of the club to my car."

"Then?," I asked slowly.

"Then when I was driving suddenly you said me to stop the car.I did it and then what happened I can't even say it" he exhaled loudly and looked other way.

I shuddered thinking about the impossibilities and my heart pounded wildly against my rib cage.I made him look towards me holding his chin and asked "What happened?"

Chapter 33

He held my hand which was previously on his chin and said:" With this hands, you touched me yesterday."

"Okay?," I urged him to continue.

"You touched me everywhere where a man desires to be touched only by a woman," he said and kissed my hands.

"WHAT?," I said more like shouted and withdrew my hands back to me away from his hold.

"Why are you behaving like this? It's hurting me to see that you don't remember anything, don't you remember how you slowly came towards me from your seat and sat on my lap holding my face in your soft palms and then you whispered sweet nothings near my ear and then you kissed me and tried to get off my Jacket."

I tried to find any fakeness in his face but found none.He was serious.

"I was drunk" my voice was brittle.

"Exactly I even said that Angela stop it you are drunk!" but you didn't even cared to listen to me instead you started crying that I don't find you attractive and all and then you jumped out of the car and started to run away.I followed you until you and I reached near a fountain.You were angry at me.You pushed me into the fountain and then jumped on me inside it.I tried to free myself but you did not wanted that.Finally I gave up and we kissed with all our passion and might."

"I mean I am a Man after all, How much can I deny such intimacy and that also to a beautiful lady" he trailed his fingers on my jaw line and said huskily "or should I say a beautiful wife."

I shooed his hand away from my face saying "Then?"

"Then? Oh, god" he groaned making me to gulp audibly."You started to get rid of my clothes inside that fountain to which I had to stop you and I carried you back to the car and drove us back to our home."

"The whole way you wouldn't stop trailing your hands on my body.I had to control and drive safely back to home."

"I thought when we would reach back home you would be tired and you would just go back to your room to sleep but No! You didn't stop."

"What did I do?," I was sure I would start to cry at any moment.

"What did you do? Ask what you didn't do.You dragged me by pulling me by my collar to your room and closed the door shut and started to unbutton or should I say you ripped my shirt and got rid of my pants.I hesitated but you only said that You are my husband and you need to satisfy my demands and after you statement I could no longer deny you and at the end I gave up and surrendered to you" he said and took the glass from my hand and gulped down the rest of the water.

"You asked me to get rid of your dress which I did and then we together began to give pleasure to each other in just 5 minutes and we consummated."

Suddenly he pounced on me making me to fallback on my pillow and he held my hands over my head whispering huskily "I like this position.You under me.Me on top of you.Our body tangled.So tempting.So dominating" he groaned and put his face inside the crook of my neck and started to kiss me softly.

"Mmm You smell delicious," I closed my eyes liking the feeling but soon got my senses back and tried to free myself and pushed him away from me making him to sit back on his position.

"You ar-are lying, I know, I can never do that,," I said not believing his words.

He raised an eyebrow and said "Oh, really? Then why don't you look down, you will get your answer Mrs.Knights."

I slowly looked down to see a oversized t-shirt and I could feel my bare legs, only underwear. "Wh-W-Who ch-changed m-me? I stuttered.

"Me off course who else will do that?" he said shrugging his shoulders like it was not a big deal.

It was a big deal to me.

I kept staring at him for some minutes then finally not holding anymore I started crying.I sobbed and cried loudly when he tried to touch me.

"God! hey! what happened? Why are you crying?" He tried to touch me again.

I cried more loudly and pulled the duvet back to my chest.He tried to touch me several times to which I only cried louder and louder.

"Fine! Ugh, stop crying! stop crying! I'm sorry" he blurted out making me stop my stream of tears immediately.

I looked at him questionably and whispered repeating him with hoarse tone "I'm sorry?"

He couldn't take it anymore and laughed loudly.His laughter booming inside the room and the room was filled with only his laughter.He laughed so badly that he had to hold his stomach from hurting.

"God (laughing) did you see your face (laughing) so funny" he laughed and rolled down on the floor.

I just stared at him confusingly, wiping away my years from my eyes.

"Not-Nothing happened, " he said still laughing hard.His face was red because of laughing too hard and his breaths were shallow and rapid.Finall, he gasped for air and stopped his laughing.

"Nothing happened I was just playing with your mind, Sweetheart" he mocked.

Everything began to register in my mind and I wiped away my tears.

I looked down to my dress then at him.

"Oh, that? Lucy changed you don't worry."

Relief washed over me and I took deep breaths and calmed my heart beat which was still beating wildly.

Did he play with my mind?

I opened my eyes and grabbed the pillow beside me and started to fling it towards him.

He started laughing again and soon we were involved in a wild pillow fight.

On the middle of the fight he grabbed my pillow and threw it away.Then he grabbed my waist and pulled me towards him making me to gasp due to our close proximity.

He stared at me with his intense green eyes making me to shiver and shudder in his arms.He pushed my golden locks out of my face to the back of my ear.Trailing his fingers from my eyes to my jaws he said huskily "I like seeing you laugh and carefree around me.I lied to you about everything that happened between us last night though some parts of it were true like you stopping the car, running away, pushing me into the fountain."

A small smile formed on my lips and his eyes traveled towards my lips.I saw a change in his eyes which seemed like hunger, lust and something else.

I averted my face away from his face looking towards the other side.

He finally let go of me and cleared his throat saying "Uh get ready in two hours we are going to my relatives house to meet them."

I nodded and bit down my lips.

He sighed and used his fingers to release my lips from my teeth, his cold fingers lingering on my warm lips more than a minute "Don't do that" he said and removed his fingers from my lips.

He went towards the door but before closing it he turned towards me and said "Oh, I forget to tell, the kissing part in that fountain was also true" he said dreamingly and grinned seeing my widened eyes and flushed face.

I took a pillow from the floor and threw it at him but it didn't touch him because he closed the door in time making the pillow to hit the closed door.

His laughter was audible from the other side of the door and I grabbed a pillow and stuffed my face in it screaming loudly while blushing deep red.

We kissed and I don't remember anything.

Chapter 34

Xavier

Today we were to visit my relatives for which I have already told Angel to get ready.

Dad called me this morning inviting me and Angel to attend the family get together which we always have every once in a year. That means Dad including his cousin brothers would be present there and of course Aunt Heather my dad's sister will be present too.

She is a piece in this world.

I got ready within half an hour and waited for Angel in the living room. I was checking my emails on my iPhone when she came and sat next to me.

I looked at her to see that she was wearing a lovely navy blue dress with gladiators and a peach chained sling bag. Her hair was down which I liked and as usual with minimal makeup. She smiled at me and said, "I'm ready. "

I nodded and shoved my phone into my pocket and got up "Let's go then. "

We went to our garage and I chose my Gallardo for the ride.

"It will take three hours to reach there. Because we are going to our farmhouse which is in the outskirts of the city," I told her to which she nodded.

I was excited because I could spend three hours alone with her. We put on our seat belts and drove off to the farmhouse.

The silence in my car began to irritate me.

"She never talks from her side,," I thought to myself while stealing glances at her.

"Why can't I get a talkative wife?," I thought and exhaled a breath.

"Still I like her for the way she is," I muttered to myself and as if she heard me she asked"Did you say something?," she asked

I shook my head at her and she nodded looking out of the window to which I sighed.

Minutes later I heard her asking "Umm Tell me about this gathering. "

"Oh, Finally! She speaks," I thought

I smiled at her seeing that she was genuinely asking me about my family wanting to know about them.

"Um, actually we all have this gathering once in a year so that we can remain in contact with each other.Dad will be there. His cousin sister Aunt Heather will be there too and her two sons Liam and Cole will be there."

"What about her husband?," she asked softly.

"Um he is no more,," I said nonchalantly.

"Oh, I'm sorry,," she said with regret evident in her voice.

"Oh, no need to, you didn't know and he died due to a car accident when we were fifteen or may be sixteen, long ago,," I told her.

"I see," she biting down on her lips making me groan internally.

"Angel!," I snapped making her jump in her seat in surprise.

"Don't do that!," I said releasing her lips with my finger.

"This woman!," I muttered.

"Uh then from my mother's side Aunt Stella who is my mother's sister and her husband Steve Martin and their two Sons Henry and Ethan and their daughter who is Seventeen Rochelle will be there,," I said my mouth forming into a thin line.

"And yeah I want to clear this Aunt Heather is really noisy.No offense, she loves me and she will love you too but she sometimes really gets on my nerves and yeah I want to sort this out that Henry was going to get our company's responsibilities if I didn't marry you."I said and looked at her.

She looked out of the window probably to avoid my gaze and I regretted saying that to her."Angel I didn't mean t-," she cut me off me saying "No it's okay I mean I'm really sorry if I would have any Idea with what was going on with you then I really would have denied the proposal," she shrugged her shoulders and looked out of the window.

"Okay! She would've denied marrying me."

I didn't like how it sounded but I decided not to pull the matter any further. Again there was an annoying silence and I turned on the radio to fade it away.

We reached the farm house and I parked my Gallardo in front of the door entrance and got out. On the middle of our way Angel noticed a restaurant and she insisted on bringing a Casserole dish with her.

We entered the house and soon we're greeted by our family members. First I was choked out of breath when I was crushed into a bear hug none other than aunt Heather."Oh, look at him, he has grown so thin. Doesn't your wife feed you well Xavier?," she asked chirping.

I huffed out a breath and said: "My wife actually cooks delicious food and I think I have put on some weight," I said feeling proud of Angel's cooking.

She then ran to Angel and hugged her choking her breath just like me to which I grew tensed "Oh, dear look at her she is so beautiful. I didn't get time to have a proper interaction with you in your wedding but today, the whole day I'm going to keep you with me," she chirped and clapped her hands. Angel only gave her an amused smile and looked at me, her eyes twinkling.

"Wait! The whole day with her?," I scowled at the thought.

Then how am I going to spend my time with her?

I sighed "Aunt Heather!"

Then she was greeted by Steve and Stella who were humanly greeting her much to my relief.Then came Liam and Cole. I don't have any problem with them because Liam was engaged and Cole was committed.

But the person whom I despise the most was Henry.He always had hots for my things.He was really excited to get my company's responsibility.

Liam and Cole greeted Angel with a mere handshake, complementing about her beauty then came, Henry the devil himself. He smirked at me which I wanted so badly to wipe it out of his irritating face and went towards Angel. He introduced himself to her and even had the audacity to take her hand and kissed on it making Angel blush and she withdrew her hand out of uneasiness.

I went towards her and wrapped my hands on her waist securely raising an eyebrow towards Henry.

"Relax man! I was just greeting properly to your wife.After all, she is beautiful" he said and looked towards Angel like she was some kind of meat.I didn't like it at all.Him looking at her was irritating me.I just wanted to show him his place.

"Back off," I blurted out my eyes reflecting my anger.

"Wha-" he askedbut I cut him off.

"I don't like with you touching her.Touch her again and you are dead," I said with venom in my voice and with so much anger that he backed off raising his hands in surrender.My anger was always evident from my eyes and people usually got scared just by looking at my eyes.They think

that I could fight fiercely with them.Which is true because I am a trained kickboxer and martial art fighter.And I could seriously hurt them.Very badly.

I noticed Angel trying to take deep breaths and she was shivering.

Why is she shivering?

Is she cold?

Then the realization hit me.She was shivering because of me.Or more because of my anger.

"Shit! I forgot to be softer around her.Now she is afraid of me.Again," I groaned at the thought.

"Great going Xavier.Why don't you kick your face with the victory?" my inner self-mocked me.

Stupid!

I relaxed and turned her around.Everyone witnessed the incident and were watching us intently.I shrugged off their presence and held her face whispering "I'm sorry. "

Though I could see her eyes watering still she managed to hold back her tears and nodded smiling weakly to which I smiled at her.

I loved this one thing of her.She was a brave woman.

Then Ethan came to greet Angel.He maintained his distance noticing my eyes which were still directed towards Henry and chose to introduce himself from a safe distance.

Then came Rochelle.She is really shy just like Angel and smiled introducing herself.Angel relaxed a bit talking to her and I don't know what Angel said which made Rochelle laugh out really loud.We all were astonished to see Rochelle laugh because she hardly laughs and that also so loudly.I looked at Angel to see her smiling, her posture much relaxed to my satisfaction and then they both hugged each other.

We went towards our own direction much to my dislike.The ladies pulled Angel along with them towards the kitchen while we all men sat in the living room.I could hear laughter coming from the kitchen.

"I guess they are enjoying themselves," Dad said smiling.

"Angela dear is really mixing and she is far better than your previous women Xavier.You are a lucky man" said Steve and I nodded smiling.

Off course I'm lucky.

Henry scoffed which grabbed our attention and we turned towards him.

"Lucky? Oh, really? It was only because of me that he got to marry her.Look at him he got both of them.The company and as well as the beautiful woman.What did I get?" he said nonchalantly.

"What will you get? That's my father's company and I am the heir and by the way, Thank you actually.It was only because of you I could marry Angel."I smirked satisfied with my reply.

"Angel? Really? I bet she is only there with you for your money and to warm your bed, I mean isn't it true? If you have denied the offer then maybe I would've been the one to get the Company and even the lady to my bed" he smirked and that was enough for my patience to give up.

I bolted towards him making his eyes widen in shock and punched him right in his face probably breaking his nose.I punched him again and again because he had no chance against me.I was pushed back by Dad and Liam while Steve inspected his injury.

"Listen to me you skunk say one word again against her and my company and you will be dead for sure," I snapped my voice filled with venom.

The ladies ran out of the kitchen towards us to know about the situation. I saw Angel who was looking at us with confusion.

I signaled her to come towards me which she did slowly and nervously and as soon as she reached near me I pulled her towards me making her gasp and hugged her.She was stiff in my arms until I roamed my hands on her back making her relaxed. I hugged her more tightly and shoved my face in the crook of her neck.

"Make me relax," I whispered near her ears.

She eventually put her hands on my shoulders then roamed it on my back whispering "it's okay" softly.Eventually, I began to relax and my hold began to loose on her.I breathed deeply and looked at her eyes and found myself calming down mesmerized by her beautiful orbs.Though she was looking at me with fear, when I smiled she reciprocated by smiled back at me relaxing down a little.

I found my answers that day.

Only she was the one who could calm me and relax me when I was angry.

No one could ever do that and no one even could do that in the future but only she.

Only her.

Chapter 35

I looked back towards everyone who were watching us intently and Dad giving me a knowing smile.Steve and Stella were scolding Henry for his behavior and aiding his nose.

"Okay everyone back to your place. Everything is sorted now" Dad said making the ladies go back towards the kitchen and the guys to sit back in the living room.

Angel left my hands and turned around to leave but I held her hands saying "No."

I pulled her with me to upstairs and to a room and closed the door.

"Mr.Kni-," she began but I kept my finger on her lips silencing her.

"Ssh just come here,," I said opening my arms for her.

She looked at me for some seconds but eventually walked towards me.I pulled her to me and hugged her, embracing her with my arms tightly.I could feel her raised heart beat.I tightened my hold on her and pushed her hair to a side and put my face in the crook of her neck making her gasp.I inhaled deeply mesmerized with her scent.

"Mr.Knights what are you doi-," I cut her off making her look into my eyes.I held her with her shoulder and lowered myself to level myself with her eyes.She was still small comparing to mine height.I gazed intensely on her face mentally remembering the beauty spot which was present near her lower lip and one near her eyes.

I never noticed that.

"Call me by my name,," I asked her trying to be as polite as I could.

"Bu-," she began and I narrowed my eyes making her stop abruptly.

"Say my name," I encouraged her making her stiff and uncomfortable.

"Say it,," I said again and this time she looked into my eyes and finally said "Xavier."

I loved it how it sounded from her mouth. "Say it again," I encouraged.

"Xavier,," she said with her soft tone making me shiver with pleasure.

I pulled her back to me and smiled.I loved her body close to me.I loved her scent.I loved everything about her.

I hugged her tight and eventually pulled away.Unexpectedly, I kissed her on her cheek making her gasp and left her there in that room going back to the living room with a happy mood.

When I came back I found Henry already sitting there holding an ice bag on his cheek and a band-aid on his nose.

Dad was sitting casually talking with Steve while Ethan was talking to Liam.Cole was busy on his phone smiling probably chatting with his girlfriend.

I sat on the sofa grabbing everybody's attention.I smirked at Henry making him scowl on me.

"You are back? So quickly?" Steve asked with astonishment.

I raised an eyebrow confused.

"He means you don't come back this quick when you get angry" Ethan said erasing my confusion.

I smiled happily and said "Yeah because I found my calmness,," I said and retreated my head on the sofa and took out my iPhone checking my emails all the time smiling like a goof.

When Dinner was done we went towards the dining hall and we all sat on our seats.I made Angel sit next to me and glared at Henry who scoffed seeing her close to me.Stella Scolded him for his behavior making Liam, Cole, and Ethan laugh at him.

The food was placed before us on the table making our mouth water."She is really a great cook, some of this are made by Angela and I got to say you are really lucky Xavier dear" Aunt Heather chirped clapping her hands and smiling at us.

"We are really excited to see Junior Xavier or Angela running in the dining hall," Stella said looking at us dreamingly.

I liked thinking about making Angel pregnant with my child in her womb.I looked at her to see her uncomfortable hearing this.

I frowned at this.

Doesn't she want to have kids with me?

Doesn't she like kids?

I frowned more and ate my Dinner in silence while everyone remained busy in gossiping.I would steal glances towards Angel to see her smiling and talking to Rochelle.

When we were done we bid our farewells to everyone.

"I wish Amelia to be here to see you both and give her blessings to you both" Stella said and tears rolled down her cheeks thinking about her sister.Steve hugged her and tried to stop her from crying.

We went inside the car and drove off.

"She really loved her sister" Angel spoke softly.I hummed in response. Now when I think of it I find Angel really somewhat like Mom as Dad found previously.

She is kind just like Mom.Shy, beautiful, Strong, intelligent just like Mom.

I smiled seeing the similarities.I looked towards Angel to see her sleeping in her seat leaning her head on the window.Her hair was shielding her face from my gaze.I softly pushed her hair back with my one hand and kept another on the steering wheel.

We were driving for Two hours when the car stopped with a shrieking sound.

"Man! Not again," I grunted and smacked the steering wheel in frustration.Angel jolted up from her sleep making me regret doing that.

"What happened?," she askedrubbing her eyes to get rid of the sleep.

"Uh, The car stopped,," I said nervously.

I thought she would lash out at me for my car like other women usually do but as always, I got the unexpected.

She came towards me and leaned on me.

Is she trying to be romantic?

Well I don't mind at all.

But my thoughts were thrown out the window when she pushed the Hood switch of the car and got out of the car.

I followed her out of the car to see her opening the hood of the car and she began to inspect the machines.

"Hey! what are you doing?," I asked astonished.It's not every day that you get to see a woman inspecting the machines.

"Looking for the problem,," she said not even looking at me.

"Do you know what you are doing?," I asked wanting to be sure.

"Of course, I am a mechanical engineer after all and I can do this because of my experience with a friend,," she said skeptically.

Wait! Did she say mechanical engineer?

A god damn engineer?

Why I am always the last one to know something like this about her.

"Hey! You never said me that you are a mechanical engineer," I said crossing my arms around my chest irritated.

"Well, that's because you never asked me about my qualifications,," she said putting her hands on her hip.

"Okay but that doesn't mean that you won't tell me about you from your side,," I said trying to reason myself.

"Fine! My fault.I am a Mechanical Engineer.Is this fine now Xavier?," she said irritated.

She is irritated but she looks hot when she is angry and the way she said my name I wanted to eat her.

I grinned like a fool watching her do her work.She went to the trunk and took out the tool box.Then she came back towards the Bonnet and began to do her work.

I have to say watching her working so professionally working on the machines turned me on.She looked so sexy and hot.She lowered herself down to put the tool back in the toolbox which resulted her dress to raise up showing me her skin which was flawless and free of scars or any kind of marks.I groaned internally.If anything I wanted to do now then it was to go to her and do the things with her which would satisfy me to my core.

Finally she was done and she closed the hood and went back to the trunk to keep the tool box back in there.She cleaned her hands using the napkin from the napkin box and went to her seat and put on her seat belts.

"What? Are you going to stand there the whole night?," she askedpeeping her head out of the window.

"What? You are not going to check your work is finished or not?," I asked raising an eyebrow.

"I know my work Mr.Knights," she mocked at me smiling teasingly.

"So confident? I like it.Then let's check it Mrs.Knights," I mocked her back and sat on the driver seat putting on the seat belt.

"So ready?," I asked putting the key in the ignition.

She nodded and I ignited the Engine only to find the car roar back to life.

She smiled and I just gave her an astonished look not really believing what she did.

"Good work Miss Engineer,," I said feeling proud of her work and drove off.

She smiled and looked out of the window and I kept myself busy in thinking if there is any other thing which I don't know yet about her.

Suddenly a thought crossed my mind and an image of a girl near my car running away hearing my voice flashed in my mind.

Now I when I think of it I found some similarities.That girl that day also had golden hair just like Angel and did the machine work so professionally just like Angel.She was even tall just like Angel.

Could it be her?

I laughed nervously and scratched my jaw still driving.

"Hey I wanted to ask you a question,," I asked eager to know if she was the one for whom I was able to reach the most important meeting of my life.

"Yes?," she askedsignaling me to continue.

"I just wanted to know uh if I mean did you fix somebody's car a few months before?," I asked nervously.

She kept her face on her hand and began to think "Yes, may be the last time I fixed somebody's car, it was few months back."

"Really? What did you do," I asked growing impatient.

"Uh I fixed it's Carburetor," she said happily and I stopped the car applying the brakes with a screeching sound making both of us to lean forward only to be pulled back by our seat belts.

Thank God!

Shit! I whispered out loud thinking last time my car's problem was the Carburetor.

Double Shit!

It was her who repaired my car unknowingly and because of her I was able to reach the meeting and I was the one who treated her so badly thinking that she ruined my life when she was the one who made my life.

"What happen?" Angel asked me with her eyes wide open because of the sudden stop.

I looked towards her and then outside of the window to the sky shouting "God, why are you doing this to me?"

Chapter 36

Xavier

"May I come in?," I saw Ron peeping his head from the door looking at me with a small smile on his alabaster face.

"You may,," I said and returned back to my file going through it thoroughly for any mistakes.

"Sir!" he said as he kept a piece of paper on my table.

I looked up at him through my glasses and took the paper to read.

"It's the preparation list for the silver jubilee this year sir," he said and I checked the list.

"Oh, yeah! The company is completing its twenty-five years this year," I said and he nodded.

"It's in this end of the month," he said and I nodded.

"I know" was my curt reply.

"So tell me about the preparations,," I said keeping my files aside.

"Like it has been written on the list, we have already sent invitation to some important guests.Venue has been selected, catering and organizers has been finalized" he said and I nodded.

"But," he said and I looked up at him to find him scratching his neck looking uncomfortable.

"But?," I asked.

"Um Sir has specially ordered me to-" he pursed his lips and looked here and there.

"Dad? What did he order you?," I asked getting impatient.

"He wants a party," he said making me scoffed.

"Aren't this a type of party?," I asked twirling the pen in between my finger.

"Um a different type of," he said and I narrowed my eyes at him.

"He actually wants a competition. Where people of our company will take part. "

"Precise?," I asked

"A couple dance competition to be precise" he completed.

I sighed and rubbed the bridge of my nose in aggravation.

"That old man!," I muttered.

I picked up my phone and dialed his number. It rang for few times and then it got disconnected.

I sighed.

"What's wrong?" Ron asked me.

"He cut my call,," I said and kept the phone on the table.

"I guess he knew I was going to call him for this. That old man!," I thought and looked up at Ron.

"Do as he has asked you to do," I said and kept my elbow on the armrest and intertwined my fingers across each other.

"Will you be joining the competition?" he asked as he gathered up the papers.

"Me?," I asked.

"I mean you and Ma'am. It's a couple dance competitions after all" he said and I thought about it.

"Uh I am sorry for being noi-," I cut him off "Count us in. "

"We will participate,," I said and saw as he began to grin.

"What's with that grinning?," I asked.

"I have heard Sir talking a lot about Ma'am. I never got a chance to meet her. We all are expecting to meet her in the function" he said and I nodded understanding.

"Of course," I muttered.

"I am going back home. I am done here," I said as I got up from my seat and wore my Jacket.

"But what about the meeti-"

"Don't ask me dumb questions. Handle it of course" was my curt answer. He nodded and began to arrange all the papers on my table.

As I made my way towards the door I couldn't help but to stop when I imagined Angel looking at me with disapproval.

I sighed for the umpteenth time of the day.

"The things you are doing to me," I muttered and pulled the jacket more to me.

"Ron!," I called.

"Yes sir?" He said.

"Will you please reschedule my meeting?," I asked.

I heard the faint noise of papers and files falling on the ground.

"That idiot lost it,," I thought.

"Of-of course sir," I heard his befuddled voice.

"And you can too take the day off,," I said and exited the room but I did heard a thud voice.

"What's wrong with everyone? Was I that crude to everyone that my civilized behavior is looking odd to them?," I thought and rubbed my forehead while walking towards the elevator.

On reaching home, I went towards my room and changed into my black trouser and white shirt.

Chapter 37

"Angela?"

"Angel?" I knocked on her door. When she didn't respond I opened the door only to find no one in the room.

"Where is she?" I thought.

"Lucy where is Angela?" I asked once I reached the kitchen.

"She went out to buying something. She will be back soon though," she said and I furrowed my eyebrows in confusion.

"Why didn't she tell me if she wanted to buy something? I would have taken her," I thought and went towards the living room.

I sat on the couch and flipped through channels not finding anything interesting.

The doorbell rang and I was first to get up on my feet.

"Must be Angel," I thought and walked towards the door stopping Lucy on my way.She nodded and smiled at me.I went towards the door and opened it only to reveal a girl whose name is Jenny or maybe was it Nancy?

"What do you want? Get lost!," I said and was ready to ready to slam the door on her face but stopped when she put her hand between the door and the wall to stop me.

"Are you crazy? What do you think are you doing?," I growled at her.

"I am sorry for disturbing you bu-," I cut the red hair girl before me "See I don't want to do anything. It was just a one-night stand so please leave. I don't want any disturbance," I said strictly while she shook her head wanting to say something.

"I am not here to cause any problem. Please listen to me," she said and I looked at her.

She looked different today. Unlike the last time she was actually wearing a black blouse and a black jeans with a van. Her hair was neatly tied up and she looked decent.

I remember how she looked when I brought her home that day. She was wearing exceptionally revealing dress and had sultry make up on her face. I threw her out of my house after our night stand when she refused to leave.

I was that type of person who never kept any relationship with a night stand.

"What is it?," I asked in my professional cold tone.

I didn't want her to think anything which she would find hope on or think that something was between us.

"I want something back,," she said which made me narrow my eyes at her.

"I am not giving you any money. So get lo-," she cut me off.

"Who do you think I am? I am not here to ask for any money. I am not a beggar neither am I a plotting anything. I belong to a reputable family and I am here only to take back a precious thing which I left here the last time uh the last time I came here," she said and I looked at her skeptically.

"What thing?," I asked being skeptical.

"A chain with a small pendant,," she said which made me confused.

"What chain? There is no chain-"

"I think the last time when yo-," she paused and looked uncomfortable for a moment before speaking "When you tore my dress from the front, it fell off my neck in your bedroom,," she said and for a moment my brain got blanked.

"No there is nothing like that. So go away no-," I was about to slam the door when she interrupted

"Please! Please that chain is very important to me now. I have been searching for it for so many days and then I recalled losing it the last time I came here. "

"Look it's already been so many months to that incident and I never spotted any chain in my room. If I find it anyways I will return it back to you. So please leave," I said curtly but she shook her head no.

"Please you are not understanding. That's very important to me. Please let me look for it by myself for once," she begged.

"What? Are you craz-"

"Please I am begging you," she forced and I took in her expression. She looked as if she was in the verge of crying.

"Fine! But if you don't find it. Don't come back ever," I said and saw her smiling nodding.

"Thank you. I promise I won't cause you any disturbance," she said and I opened the door wide open for her to enter.

"You know the way,," I said and she nodded walking towards my bedroom.I closed the door and went after her.

I saw her looking under my bed, my table, even under the nightstand.

"I am not getting it,," she said with a broken voice.

"Look if it is that expensive then let me pay you for it. I was the one who threw it after all," I said and took out my wallet.

"No you don't understand. It's not about money," she said and got up on her feet from her kneeling position.

"Then?," I asked curiously.

"That was close to my heart,," she said and I stood silently wanting her to complete.

"It was given to me by my boyfriend,," she said and confusion marred my face hearing that.

Chapter 38

"If you had a boyfriend then why the hell did you sleep with me?" I questioned somehow feeling anger growing inside me.

"We had a break up,," she said looking broken.

"The day we met in that club, I was drunk. I just wanted to get over the fact that we were done.I found him cheating on me. I wanted to do the same to him. That's why I came with you," she said with a broken voice.

A glimpse of my past fell like a curtain before me and I gulped not wanting to remember it.

Getting cheated was the most painful thing one could ever suffer.

"But few days back he came back to me. He told me that he was absolutely drunk when he cheated on me and wants to amend the thing between us. He declared that he was terribly sorry for breaking my heart and he was incomplete without me," she said with a small smile and I crossed my arms across my chest nodding.

"At first I thought that he was just trying to get back into my pants but," she paused for a moment.

"But?," I questioned.

"There came a time when he met this accident and went into a coma,," she said with a hoarse voice and finally she lost it. She cried standing there and I stood there uncomfortably thinking what to do.

"But before he went in coma he confessed that he truly loved me. He wanted me to give him a last chance. He told me to come wearing that chain that he gifted me in my last birthday. If I did, he would take it as that he has been forgiven and I am willing to give him a chance but I failed to do that. Because he met with an accident which sent him into coma and most importantly I lost that chain," she began to sob harder and I went near her and offered her the napkin.

"Thank you," she said gratefully and took the napkin from me.

"Now what I am going to do. I don't understand. I know that he is in a temporary coma. He would be back soon but I want to meet him with the chain telling him that I still love him and I am willing to forgive him," she cried.

"What am I supposed to do now?," she cried.

I patted her shoulder feeling awkward. She stopped crying and composed herself before smiling at me.

"Sorry I lost control," she said and I nodded understanding.

"I guess I have lost it forever," she said with a broken voice and I looked sympathetically at her.

"Just go and stay with him until he comes back again. Tell him the truth. I am sure that he will understand. It's been very long after all," I consoled her and she bit down on her lips probably stopping herself from crying.

"Thank you for understanding. It looks like it isn't here. I will be leaving now," she said and walked towards the door.

"Wait!," I said and she stopped on her track.

"I am sorry,," I said which made her look at me wide yet confused eyes.

"I am sorry for the way I treated you back then.For throwing you out of my house.Uh you know," I rubbed the back of my head.

"It's okay.I understand.I was a stranger after all," she said and I shook my head.

"No! I mean I shouldn't have treated you like that.For which I am truly sorry," I said genuinely to which she returned a smile.

"I guess I have heard it wrong," she muttered and I looked at her with confusion.

"I have heard that you are a cold, cruel, ruthless type of person who never apologizes for anything.But I guess I have heard wrong," she said and I looked the other way.

"She has heard correct though,," I thought.

"Or maybe you have changed" her statement made me look at her with wide eyes.

"Oh, so it is love then,," she said smiling at me.

"Love? And me? What the hell," I thought.

"I'm a psychologist by the way.I do understand people's psychology," she said and I quirked my eyebrow.

"So does it look like as if I am in love?," I asked and she shrugged.

"I don't know you that well,," she said.

"But I know one thing though,," she said making me look at her questionably.

"Love do change a person's heart,," she said and I shifted on my legs uncomfortably.

"And I think I am right," she muttered but I heard her but pretended as if I didn't hear her.

"What did you say?," I asked pretentiously.

"Oh, nothing," she said with a smile.

"I shall take my leave now,," she said and walked out of my room.

I stood there for some minute before sighing.

"Love," I said and a smile broke on to my face thinking about Angela.

I walked out of my room and stopped when I saw the woman standing before me with her back facing me.

"Hey what's wrong?," I asked and looked over her only to feel my heart racing up seeing Angela standing before her with a stoic face.

"Angela,," I said.

She looked at me and then at the woman and then her eyes glanced towards my room.

"Oh, no! Damn it Xavier. What if she gets a wrong impression over this?" my inner voice yelled at me.

Chapter 39

Angela Pov

Lucy opened the door for me and I smiled at her when she took the paper bags for me.I have bought everything that we can use today for dinner.

"Ah! I see.You are planning to make spaghetti today?," she asked as she looked into the bag.

"Umm-hmm.I want to eat Spaghetti today," I said and kept my shoes inside the rack.

"Umm Sir is already home,," she said while I was walking towards the living room.

"Xavier is already home? Where is he?"

"He is in his room with a guest,," she said and I nodded.

"Okay let me see,," I said and made my way towards his room while she walked away towards the kitchen.

Half way through my way, I stopped in my tracks when a red haired woman walked out of his room.She walked out of the room but when she saw me, she stopped right before me with a stunned expression.

Then came out Xavier himself.He didn't notice my presence as the woman was blocking me from his sight.

"Hey! What's wrong?" he askedthe lady when she stepped aside.

Xavier glanced towards me and his eyes widen and he said "Angela. "

I looked towards the woman and then at him and then towards his room.

"Is she leaving?," I wondered.

"Angel it's not wh-" Xavier said but was cut off by the lady.

"Hi I am Pearl Olson," the lady said and raised her hand for me to take.

"I am Angela Knights,," I said and gave her my hand to which she smiled.

"You must be his wife, on,," she said and I nodded.

"Well then It was nice meeting you I shall be going now,," she said and took a step forward when it struck me.

"Wait!," she stopped at her place and looked at me questionably.

"Angel?" Xavier questioned.

"Just a minute.Did you say, Pearl Olson?," I asked to which she nodded.

I bit down on my lips and went towards the stair.

"Lucy?," I called from my place.

"Yes?," she answered as she came towards the stair.

"Remember that I told you to keep it till I ask for it? That I found a few months ago," I asked and she made a confused face but then it clicked to her.

"Oh, yes! Yes!," she exclaimed.

"Bring it to me,," I asked and she nodded walking towards the other room where she kept it to bring it to me.

"Just a minute please,," I asked Pearl.She nodded reluctantly but waited.

A few minutes later Lucy walked towards us with a box in her hand.

"Here," she handed me the box.

"I believe it belongs to you,," I said as I handed the box to Pearl.

She took it out of curiosity and gasped when she opened the box.

"It… it's mine Pendant,," she said as she touched the pendant and her eyes shed tears.

"Is it yours?" Xavier asked as he glanced at the box.

"Yes, it is," she cried and looked up at me with her eyes filled with joy.

"How did you know it was mine?," she asked .

"The pendant has initials carved on its back.So I just assumed it as Your name is Pearl Olson and the initials are 'P. O' I didn't know it, in particular, I just guessed," I said and she wiped her tears with her hand.I took out my handkerchief from my pocket and offered her to which she gladly took it from me "Thank you," she whisperedwith a hoarse voice.

The next moment she flung her arms and embraced me with a hug.

"Thank you! Thank you so much," she cried and I looked at Xavier too stunned by her action.He was smiling and gestured me to return the hug.So I did.I patted her back and said "It's okay" when she began to sob.

"I didn't find anything attached to it though.I only found the pendant," I said when she retreated back.

"Oh, it's okay.This pendant is important.Thank you once again for keeping it safely with you," she said and looked back towards Xavier.

"It was given to me by someone very special.I thought I lost it forever.But today I found it.I came here in search of it but was disappointed when I didn't find it.Thanks to you it is back to me again," she said and I gave her a smile not knowing what to say.

"I must leave now,," she said and I shook my head No.

"No! Join us for lunch," I offered.

"I will but some another day.I need to go now," she said holding my arm.

"But yo-" Xavier cut me off "Angel it's okay.Let her go" he said and reluctantly I nodded.

We walked her towards the door and she thanked one more time before walking away.

"Where did you get that?" Xavier asked as we walked towards the dining hall.

"Oh, I found it in your room.I even asked you about it one day but you shrugged it off saying you don't know to whom it belonged.So I asked Lucy to keep it until I ask for it.It seemed precious," I shrugged.

"I did?" he asked .

I nodded.

"You were probably busy in your work that day,," I said and we both sat on our seat.

Lucy began to arrange the plates for us and served the food for us.

"You are early home today," I asked.

"Yeah I didn't feel like working today" he shrugged.

"Why? Are you alright? Are you not feeling well?"

"Relax! I am fine.I just didn't feel like to work today" he said and I nodded.

We both ate our food in silence, occasionally talking to each other.

"It's our company's Silver Jubilee this end of the month," he said as we sat on our sofa in the living room.

"Wow,," I exclaimed excitedly.

"And Dad has wished for celebration," he said and I nodded.

"And he also has set up a competition" he finished.

"Competition?," I asked confused.

"Yeah! He wants a couple dance competition. Yeah! I know it's stupi-"

"Wow! That's amazing," I exclaimed happily.

"What? You like his idea?" he looked stunned.

"Of course! It's the company's Silver Jubilee. It's a good way to interact with people who gave their years to the company. This will be fun. It will be engaging and they will get to do what they haven't done may be from a long period of time. The dance competition is a very good idea," I said and leaned back against the sofa.

"So will you be my partner?" he asked out of nowhere making me jerk up on my place.

"What? You are taking part?," I asked surprised.

"Correction! We are taking part" he said and crossed his arms across his chest.

"Really? Are you serious?," I asked.

"Umm hmm," he nodded.

"Oh, my god! That will be fun. What are we waiting for? The celebration is at the end of this month so that means we have only one and a half month on our hand," I calculated in my mind.

"We have to practice. I want to win the competition," I said and stood up from my place.

"What? Why do you all of a sudden want to win the competition?" he asked shocked.

"Because I am the Ceo's wife. If we are taking part we must win," I said and took hold of his hand.

"Wait! What? We just had our lunch now. C'mon I can't practice now" he argued.

"We will not practice now,," I said as I began to pull him with me towards my room.

Chapter 40

"Then?" he asked .

"We are going to search for a perfect music and concept from the internet. And hopefully, we will find some interesting dance steps to perform," I said excited and used both of mine hand to drag him. He was being awfully drowsy.

"Angela C'mon! We can do this some other time. Let's just watch some TV or sleep. Please," he argued.

I stopped on my track and let go of his hand.

"Do you not want us to win?," I asked.

"Wha-"

"Or do you not want me to be your partner?"

"What are yo-"

"I am sorry. I am dragging you into all this. You must be tired and I am dragging into...," I sighed "Never mind! Let's watch some movie," I said and walked towards the living room when he got hold of my hand stopping me.

"Wait!"

"Why do you look so excited all of a sudden? Is it only because of the celebration?" he askedout of nowhere making my heart beat flutter.

"Or is it something else?" he asked

"Angela" he called when I didn't say anything.

"I- I just wanted to hold my place," I said and closed my eyes.

"Hold your place?" he asked and using his finger he raised my chin up. I took a deep breath before opening my eyes.

"I mean you are the owner of your company. You are well known and everyone respects you. I don't want to let you dow-" he cut me off "Angela Knights."

"Let's find an amazing song. We are going to win this competition" he said and this time he was the one who was dragging me.

"Literally I had to drag him to take the competition seriously,," I said as I kept the cups in its place after wiping water away from it.

"I knew I could trust you on this" Dad laughed on the other line making me chuckle.

"When he called me I knew he got the information about me wanting to keep a competition. I knew he would never take it seriously until I thought about my daughter-in-law convincing my son for it" Dad said from the other line of the phone. I took my phone from the table and turned off the speaker button. I went towards the chair and sat on it holding the phone close to my ear.

"I hope I am not pressuring you for this," he said which made me sigh.

"I told you already. You are not pressuring me. As much you want Xavier to take part in this celebration, I too want him to engage himself in all this. It is fun and as much as I know him he will probably like to seat in his room doing all his business rather than taking part in any of the celebration," I sighed thinking about the day when he had his day off but he utilized his whole day by doing all his business work in his study room.

"That's my boy after all" Dad sighed and it looked he wasn't happy about it.

"I do appreciate his hard work but too much will only lead to brain stress and I don't want that for him," Dad said and I nodded in agreement.

"Me too,," I said and that's when I heard the front door opening.

"I guess Xavier is back,," I said into the phone.

"Well, then I will disconnect now. And practice your dance moves well because I am going to flaunt my daughter-in-law among my friends to make them jealous," I could imagine Angela

the smirk plastered on his face right now.

I laughed at this and looked ahead to see Xavier "Who is it?" he asked .

"It's Dad, ," I said which made his eyes widen.

"That old man! Rejecting my calls and here he is chatting with you.Give the phone to me" he lunged forward and snatched the phone from me.

"How dare you old ma-" he stopped with a stoic expression.

"What happened?," I asked confused on to why he stopped in the middle of the sentence.

"He freaking disconnected the call again" he screamed and I tried hard to control the laughter within me but I knew I was failing.

"It is not funny" he scoffed raking a hand through his hair.

"Oh, it is," I whispered chuckling.

"What did you say?" he asked narrowing his eyes at me.

"Nothing. Nothing," I lied.

"What was he saying?" he asked as undid the few button of his shirt and took a seat next to me.

"Nothing much. He was just saying that I need to train you properly as you, in his words, suck in dancing,," I said and watched as he made an animated cartoon face.

"What?" He gritted out.

"Yeah! I agree with him though," I said to provoke him and it worked because he gave me an incredulous look probably not believing this.

"I just hope may the best couple win,," I said pouting.

He stood up from his chair in a lightning speed which made his chair fell backward because of the force he used.

Chapter 41

"I can't believe him neither you" he huffed out air and gave me a disbelieving look. I stifled a laugh, shrugging at him.

"Whatever. Meet me in the gym room in one hour.I am going to freshen up" he said and went away towards his bedroom.

"Oh, god,," I sighed.

"Okay! So first, left foot and then turn," I said and he did it.

"Then I will come to you and you will hold me while I bend backward,," I said and he nodded.

I did my step and went to him. He held my waist firmly while I bend backward and rose up.

"And we did it,," I said and he nodded.

I smiled and moved backward only to be pulled back to him.

"Wh-What are you doing?," I asked breathlessly.

"Nothing" he whispered .

"Umm,," I took a step backward but only to be pulled back to him again.

"Xavier!," I cried.

He didn't say anything but the only thing which I saw was his face merely inches away from me. His breath fanning my face and I was like held captive in his embrace.

He moved and gazed into my eyes and that is when I saw as his face neared more to me second by second. When it registered me about what he was going to do, my eyes widen in shock and I jumped a foot backward startling both me and him.

"Uh, phone. My phone is ringing," I made up an excuse and ran out of the room with a red face.

The day has finally arrived. I wore a gray gown and did my hair into a simple twisted topknot bun. The dress looked elegant and expensive. It was Xavier who brought the dress for me for the night.

When I was done with my makeup, satisfied I stood on my silver high heels and gazed at myself into the mirror.

"Beautiful," I heard him and looked back towards the door to find him leaning against the door frame smiling at me.

"I like this color on you," he said and made his way towards me.

"Thank you,," I said and smiled at him.

"Shall we?" he asked as he gave me his hand to take and I took it smiling like a goof.

In no time, we reached the venue.

"Oh, my god," I gasped as I looked at the crowd of reporters and people gathering outside the venue.

"It looks somewhat type of an award function,," I said as I looked out of the car's windscreen and looked at the famous people who were making their ways into the hall through the crowd.

Xavier laughed hearing me and took my hand as he guided me out of the car.

"Smile at the camera," he said and I did what he said to do.

We entered hand in hand into the Banquet hall. I found myself mesmerized seeing the preparations and the way everything was organized.

"Wow" was the only word that came out of my mouth.

"Ron, my PA did this all" Xavier whispered from next to me and I felt impressed by whoever he was.

"My Son and my daughter-in-law" by the voice we knew who it was.

"Oh, my! You look so beautiful" dad said in a British accent making me giggle for Xavier scoffed at him for his fake accent.

"Always in a foul mood" dad muttered but was heard because Xavier asked, "What was that?"

"Nothing. So? Ready for the dance?" he wiggled his eyebrows at Xavier which made Xavier give him a narrowed eyes look.

"Yes, we are,," I told him and he smiled before he was pulled off by a group of man.

"C'mon let's go there," Xavier said pointing towards a corner and I nodded before walking the area.

"Sir," I heard a man and looked towards my right side to find a man alabaster skin tone coming towards us.

"It's Ron" Xavier whispered to me and I nodded.

"Good evening Sir, Ma'am" he greeted and I replied with a smile.

"It is nice to finally meet you, Ma'am," he said and I looked towards Xavier who simply shrugged his shoulder and gave me a smirk.

"Oh, it's a pleasure to meet you too. By the way, fantastic preparation. You did an amazing job," I said truthfully and watched as a tint of pink marred his cheeks and he looked down rubbing his neck.

"Thank you," he said laughing nervously.

"Uh Let's eat. I am hungry. We will catch up to you" Xavier said and dragged me towards the Buffet.

"What are you doing?," I said as I looked back towards where Ron was still standing looking at the floor.

"I am hungry" was all that Xavier said.

The rest of the evening was spent meeting dad's friends and some guests. I get to know some of Xavier business friends too.

Finally, the announcement was made for the dance competition.

"Let's get ready," Xavier said and I nodded.

The participants were asked to walk towards the green room to change into their costumes. I saw many woman and man walking towards the given man and woman green room.

I smiled at Xavier before we headed towards our own direction towards our green room.

Our costumes were already present in the green room with a makeup artist.

I took my bag and changed into my dress.

It was a black heart shaped blouse with fringe and I wore the blue sequin salsa skirt with golden short pant underneath the skirt. The skirt was open from the front and it only covered the backside. So my pant was visible and I wore the black heel. *And I was ready.*

The makeup artist did my makeup with my hair curled down and glittery eyes.

All the ladies present inside the green room began whispering to each other as they took in my appearance.

"Wow,," I heard a woman.

I smiled at them and sat on a chair taking my phone with me.

"You ready?" Xavier asked through text.

"Yes,," I replied back.

When everyone was ready, we were asked to gather up near the stage outside the banquet hall.

We made our way there and took our seat backstage.

"Hi! What are you performing? You look amazing by the way" a woman said and I smiled saying "Salsa and Thank you. You too look amazing."

"Wow! Thank you and all the best," she said and I smiled saying "All the best to you too. "

I was told that were in number five.

As the competition begins, I could hear the crowd screaming and the music blasting the air.

The first couple went up to the stage, and the song played which made the audience go wild as they cheered in joy.

I chuckled seeing the reaction of the audience.

By the time our number came, I felt myself growing nervous.

Unlike what I said to Xavier I wasn't actually hoping to win the competition. I was here to make some awesome memories and have some fun.

"You look hot," I heard him behind me as he kept his hands on my waist and kept his head on my shoulder whispering to me.

I looked back at him and turned around. He was wearing a blue buttoned down collared shirt and a black with blue sequin lining pant "So are you," I said and he grinned, his boyish grin.

"Our turn," he said and I nodded.

I walked towards the front while he went up to the stage. The audience went viral when he got up to the stage.I shook my head and laughed a bit at this.

We took our positions and then the song played. I walked up in a sexy hip swaying motion to the stage as we had rehearsed and stood before me.

It was a Salsa mix song by a Spanish female singer.

The crowd whistled and cheered when we began. Xavier was suave on the stage. Charming, elegant and confident while I tried my best to match up with his sexiness. Our moves were sexy as well as elegant. The most important part was I was enjoying.

With the last swirl, we reached the end.

Panting and sweating, we stood in the middle of the stage on our last position looking at each other with my left leg on his hold.

"Damn! Damn! Damn!" The anchor commented and we broke apart when the crowd screamed loudly for once more.

"Oh, god," I laughed and as I leaned against Xavier. He laughed too holding my waist and I waved at the audience before walking down.

We went back into the green room and changed back into our previous dress because we were to meet some important guests from abroad.

I was really enthusiastic to watch others perform but the guests were very important and I had to miss it with Xavier.

"Stupendous performance," a man said and I smiled when Xavier locked his arm with mine.

"Thank you," we said in unison.

As we were driving back home, I looked out of the window smiling to myself.

We came second and the couple who won were the most entertaining one and they deserved to be won.

Mr. Waetford was the senior most in Xavier's company. He was to retire this year and his wife who was in his mid-fifties was more than overwhelmed after they won. I was happy and Xavier was too. We all clapped in joy for their achievement and for the smile that was present on their face to be able to win.

I was happy for them and for myself too.

For I was taking an amazing memory of mine and Xavier of a happy moment, back home.

Chapter 42

Xavier

Have you ever felt yourself like you are flying in the air and you have got all the happiness of the world?

Well these days, it seems like I am the happiest man in the world. I have been really happy these days and the reason is only Angel.

My Angel.

I find happiness only with her.

The day begins with her and my day gets over with her. Only her smile makes my day.

Today some of my business associates are to come to my house. I told Angel to get everything ready for them which I know she will do it perfectly without being asked. I forgot to tell her that they will be arriving anytime soon.I went towards her room and stood outside of her room. First, I thought of knocking on her door but then thought it's already been so many months to our marriage so why to be so formal. I entered without knocking which I think was the worst and beautiful mistake of my life.

I couldn't move from my place, I was captivated by a woman who was my wife. I felt the distance of our relationship then and there. We were husband and wife in a relationship, that means we were free to do anything but yet I had to remain within my boundaries. She stood with her back facing me as she towel dry her wet hair. She already had her jeans on and the only thought that she was topless before me which made me crazy.

Something caught my attention.I could see a beauty spot on her left side of her back near her hip which really turned me on painfully.I wanted to touch it and before I could do anything crazy, I saw her shoulders go stiff.

Maybe she sensed my presence.

Shit!

Before she could turn around I swiftly went out of the room and closed the door softly without making any noise.

Thank God.

Next time I would surely knock her door before entering or I won't be able to stop myself.Still, I smiled like a pervert and went towards the living room.

After some hours Angel came down and went towards the kitchen giving me a small smile.I crossed my hands at the back of my head and rested myself on the sofa when the doorbell rang.

Lucy went to get the door and came in three well-suited gentlemen.

I greeted them with a handshake and invited them towards the living room and seated them on the sofa.I asked Lucy to call Angel and sat on the sofa talking about our business deals.

I saw Angel walking towards the hall with a warm smile on her face but much to my confusion it faded away as soon as she saw the men.

Her posture became stiff and her face radiated tension.And something more was there.Her eyes showed fear and pain.

I didn't understand what's wrong with her all of a sudden.

But I let the matter go because I thought maybe I was just being paranoid.

She seemed to relax seeing me and came towards me.The three men stood up and I introduced each of them to her.

"Gentlemen! meet my wife Angela Knights," I introduced wrapping my arms around her stiff body.

"Angel meet my business associates, Mr.Deming Yutang who is from China,," I said gesturing the bald man who wore an Armani suit.Angel smiled at him and shook his hands to which the man replied back with a warm smile of his own."Then Mr.Zachary Symington who is from America,," I said gesturing a well suited tall and aggressive looking man of my age.Angel smiled and shook his hands."It's Mr.John Winters who is from France,," I said gesturing to the overly dressed man who smiled oddly at Angel and raised his hands for Angel to which I noticed her hesitation but eventually not wanting to create a scene she shook her hand with him.I even noticed Angel taking deep breaths and her body trembling.The man Mr.John gave Angel a look which I didn't like and held her hand too long for my liking.

I cleared my throat making both of them withdraw back their hands.

We sat on the sofa and talked about business but occasionally I would mark Mr.Winters looking at Angel all while.

Angel only averted her gaze to her lap and sat quietly nodding her head whenever she was asked a question.

Finally when it was the time of our lunch I asked Angel to arrange the table, to which she bolted right towards the kitchen in a lightning speed without sparing a glance back towards our direction.

I excused myself from the three Men and went towards the kitchen.I saw her leaning against the kitchen shelf with her head down, eyes closed.I went directly towards her and stood before her.

"Is everything okay?," I asked making her snap open her eyes and look at me in surprise.

"Yeah. .uh, Yes everything is fine, I was just tired,," she said and went towards the stove.

I followed her and turned her back towards me.I held her face in my hands and made her look up at me.

I gazed intensively at her making her stand still.I was searching for my answers in her eyes.Her eyes would tell me everything about her.

I saw a flicker of fear and tension in her eyes and I got my answers.

She is lying.

She is not okay.

Something is definitely wrong with her.

"I see,," I said and pursed my lips letting go of her face and stepping back.

"I will just call them to the dining room, you carry on with your cooking,," I said nonchalantly and went out of the kitchen.

From these all months if anything I knew about her is that she would never involve me in her problems or difficulties.Whatever is disturbing her she would never share with me.I don't understand why she does that but I had told her a lot of times to drop this habit of hers.

But she just won't listen to me.

I escorted them to the dining hall and asked them to seat while the food is being served.Angel came back to the dining hall and sat next to me with a stiff posture.

Chapter 43

Lucy served us in our plates and went out of the room back to the kitchen.Everybody started eating while talking about random things.

"The food is really delicious Mr.Knights" Mr.Symington spoke taking a bite from his spoon.I smiled and nudged Angel with my elbow making her smile.

"My wife cooked it,," I said feeling proud.

"Indeed! It is really delicious and your wife is really beautiful Mr.Knights" Mr.Yutang said smiling at me.

"You are a lucky man" he added making Angel blush and she smiles towards me.

"Yeah! he is a lucky man.A beautiful wife. . ."Mr.Winters said looking at Angel.

I saw her playing with her food not really eating.

I glanced at Mr.Winters and saw that there was a deep scar on his temple and the scar looked new.

"Hey, how did that happen?," I asked gesturing with my fingers to his head.The other two men including Angel looked up from their plates at him.From my Peripheral vision, I saw Angel getting tensed.

Mr.Winters touched his scar with his finger and said "Oh, it's nothing it was a girl" he said nonchalantly.

"What did she do?" Mr.Symington asked curiously.

"I kinda wanted to make love to her but she was angry with me which led to a fight between us and her hitting me with a vase," Mr.Winters said laughing nervously and shrugging his shoulders like it wasn't a big deal.

Mr.Symington and Mr.Yutang laughed at him and said: "You have got a rough chic ha!"

"Totally! rough and wild which I like the most" Mr.Winter said smirking.

The lunch was over and the three men were ready to go.So I bid them farewell and escorted them out of the house to their car.

I went inside to find Angel nowhere in sight.I went towards her room and this time I knocked on her door.

"Angel are you there?," I asked from the other side of the door.

"Yeah, come in,," she said.

I went in to see her sitting on the sofa beside the window."What's wrong?," I asked her worriedly because her face was pale and she was sweating.

"Not-thing I am just tired," she replied smiling a little bit.

"Are you sure?"I asked pursing my lips and shoving my hands into my pant pockets.

"Yeah totally," she replied.

"Okay, you rest yourself I'm going to my room,," I said and she nodded.

With that, I turned around and walked out of her room closing her door softly behind me.

Maybe she really is tired.

The day passed by and it's been three days since that day.I was getting ready for my office earlier today and got out of my room and went towards Angel's room to see her coming back towards her room wearing her jogging short spandex and a tank top.Her hair was tied up and she was huffing and was all sweaty.

She looked hot.

"You went out for Jogging?," I asked her when she was just going into her room.

She turned and smiled at me "Yeah."

"Um I'm going out for a business meeting today to England and I will come back after two days. Okay?," I said fixing my tie.

"Okay,," she said and stood there waiting for me to continue.

"Can you manage without me these two days?," I said smirking at her and fixing my tie.

She gave me a look and raised an eyebrow.

"You know I'm very hot and sexy, hard to resist how are you going to manage?," I said smirking at her while she looked at me with wide and disbelieving eyes.I loved teasing her.

"For your kind information I can manage very well without you Mr.Knights," she huffed and crossed her arms on her chest making my eyes to follow her moves.

Not the time! You dirty Xavier.

I laughed and turned around heading back towards my room but stopped when she called me "Xavier!"

I turned around and waited for her to continue.She bit down on her lips and before I could say anything to her she came towards me and asked pointing at my tie "May I?"

I grinned and stood straight saying "You may."She smiled and began to fix my tie.All the while I would stare at her beautiful face smiling occasionally whenever she twitched her eyebrow.

"Come back Soon," she whisperedand looked at me with something in her eyes like she was trying to say something to me but something was holding her back.

I nodded and turned around but something crossed my mind and I turned back to her.She raised an eyebrow questionably at me.

I grinned and in a lightning speed kissed her on her cheek making her gasp in surprise and her eyes widen in shock.I laughed when her face grew all red like a tomato and made my way back to my room and took my luggage and went out of the house, towards my car.

My driver began to drive to the Airport and I sat at the back thinking that how these two days are going to pass without seeing her.

I smiled a little remembering how her face turned red when I kissed her and thought "These two days will be going to be hell for me. "

But little did I know that these two days will seriously become the worst nightmare of my life.

Chapter 44

Angela

When Xavier told me that he was going away for two days, I had this uneasy feeling growing inside my chest making me worried and uncomfortable.

Xavier had been very good to me since the day he has apologized for his mistakes.He often makes me smile without any reason.I have grown to know a lot more about him after that competition and I see a great friend inside him who loves to tease me and make me laugh without any reason.Things have been going really great between us and I hope it to be as it is.

The only thing which still petrifies me is his anger.He just can't control himself when he is angry and whenever he loses his control I tend to cower away and the only thing which comes first in my mind is to run.The last time when he got angry was at the family gathering.Since then, I have been avoiding doing kinds of stuff which would trigger his anger.

The day, when his Business associates were to come to our house, was the worst day of my life.Because I get to meet the only man whom I've been loathing the most since the day I met him.

John Winters.

The things that he did to me back in Paris flashed on my mind when I saw him that day.He is a wicked man and I despise him the most in this world.His actions were purely inhumane and he is criminal in my eyes who has dirty thoughts not only for me but for many women out there.The thing that he doesn't even care if a woman is married makes him worst even more than he really is.

Fear was evident in my eyes that day seeing his face again.But I maintained my posture and gesture in order to avoid creating a scene.I thought he had got his lesson that day and he wouldn't try to harm me again.So, I brushed off the matter from my mind and didn't bother to let Xavier know about it.

Today, I'm all alone in this big house.It's been a day since Xavier left for England and I have given Lucy a day off to rest because there wasn't any work in the house and I thought it would be great if she gets a day off because Xavier will be back the next day and she will be back to her work again.

I took my phone with me to the kitchen and kept it on the table when the phone beeped.I checked it to see a text message notification from Xavier.A small smile appeared on my lips and I clicked the message box to read his message.

"I know u must be crying right now thinking why did you even let me go.After all, I'm too hard to resist ;)"

I chuckled and replied back *"Nah I don't miss you.Stay there!"*

I waited for his message and checked the message box when the phone beeped.

"Ouch! That hurts! You seriously don't miss me?"

I smiled and replied *"Of course I miss You.Come back Soon. "*

"*Your wish my command wifey.Be there tomorrow early in the morning.I gotta go now for a meeting.See Yeah :* "*

"Okay.All the best...Bye. ," I replied back and kept the phone on the kitchen table.

I began to clean the kitchen using a wet cloth when the doorbell rang.I dried my hands using a turquoise towel and went to get the door thinking it might be Lucy because she told me she would come in the afternoon.I opened the door only to find no one.I looked around and went out more to look for someone but there was no one.I shrugged my shoulders and went back in closing the door.

Chapter 45

I went back to the kitchen and took the knife and began to cut the potatoes for making French fries.I was just keeping the knife aside when I felt a presence behind me.I swiftly turned around when someone snaked his arms around my waist only to find the person John Winters.

A scream escaped my mouth in surprise and I panicked seeing him in my house.He held my hands from my back in his one hand and muffled my mouth with his other hand in order to stop me from shouting.

"Hello to you too beautiful," he said with sarcasm and smirked evilly making my heart pump blood viciously.

I started to struggle and he pushed me to the kitchen shelf forcefully hitting my back in the process making me wince in pain. "Now! Now beautiful, don't make it difficult for me.I didn't take so much risk only to be pushed by you.Give me what I want.It will take only some hours and then I'll be out of your house" he sneered and pushed himself on me.

I struggled more and freed my hands and pushed him away with all my force making him stumble on his own feet.I tried to run but he was fast and again he sandwiched me between himself and the kitchen counter.

"You know the last time things didn't go that well and this time I'll be damned if I let you get away this easily.You are really beautiful and only seeing you, I get turned on.The only thing that I want from you is to fuck you so bad and hard, just let me do my work and I'll be out" he laughed evilly and tried to touch me inappropriately.

He snaked a hand in between my legs but I shut my legs close tightly.He raised his hand up and kept his hand on my left breast squeezing it painfully making me scream.I loathed his touch.

I somehow managed to get a hold of the Knife and kicked him in his groin making him let go of me and comfort his groin.I tried to escape again but again he tried to stop me.I closed my eyes and swung the knife and when I opened my eyes I saw him holding his arms which had a deep cut and was bleeding, very badly.

I took this as my chance and ran.I took the phone from the table and ran dialing the police.

My intention was to go upstairs and close my door, locking me inside.

I ran dialing the number but my feet faltered and I lost my balance and the phone fell from my hand.The screen broke but I picked it up and ran towards the stairs dialing Xavier's number from the speed dial as I couldn't see any numbers displaying because of the damaged screen.The only

number visible was fixed as a speed dial to Xavier's number and I internally thanked the lord for the help.So, I dialed it and held the phone to my ear.

The call got disconnected.Because he rejected it.I panicked and dialed again only to be rejected again.I tried again and this time he picked up whispering..."Angel didn't I tell you that I'm in meetin-" but I cut him off shouting "Xavier!," In the phone.

My voice was filled with fear and panic.

"Angela what's going o-"

"Xavier please save me! Help It's John! John Winters he. .he broke into the house and is trying to rape-" a loud scream escaped my mouth when I was tackled down to the floor.

"You bitch!" He straddled me and slapped me on my face making me cry louder.

The phone was still on my hands and I could hear Xavier shouting "Angel! Angel! Angela, what's going on?"

"Xavier!," I shouted struggling with John.He pinned my hands over my head and smirked "I knew your husband has gone out for a meeting.It was so easy to fool your guards and sneak into your house without them knowing" he said and laughed evilly.

"Leave me! Let me go," I shouted and tried to push him but it was of no use.

He held my hands over my head in his one hand and with his other hand he started to unbutton my blouse.

"So beautiful! Mmm," he whispered eyeing my cleavage.

I spat on his face which led him to lose his grip on my hands.With all my force I punched him on his eyes making him to whimper in pain and I ran on the stairs.I was in the middle of the stairs when he grabbed my feet which led me to lose my balance and I fell face plant on the steps.I could feel blood running down my cheeks from my forehead and I tasted blood in my mouth.He dragged me down the stairs by my feet, hurting my back very badly.

"Whore! Whom did you call?" He sneered and slapped me hard.I cried louder shouting "let me go, please.Please.Please," I begged him.

While struggling I again pushed him and ran away shattering everything on my way. He got hold of me again and turned me around and pushed me very forcefully making me to collide my back with the coffee table and the glass shattered cutting my back and making me bleed.

My orange blouse began to turn red because of my blood and the pain which I felt was unexplainable.I knew that it was the end of me today and I began to lose my consciousness.

But the last thing I wished on my mind was "Xavier please save me."

Chapter 46

Xavier Pov

Her words began to register in my mind and the reality hit me hard on my face.

"John Winters? How dare he?," I gritted and bolted out of the hall.

Ron came running after me and asked: "What's wrong sir?"

"Quick! get the jet ready.We are flying back now.It's Angela.Call the police and send them to my house.Hurry!," I shouted at him.He nodded and began to do what he was ordered.

The phone was still on my hand and I could hear her shouting, screaming and crying.I even heard what that rat said to her and did to her.

I was getting angry the more I heard her because I couldn't do anything to save her.

"God Damn it!," I yelled holding my head.

"Angela! Angel Angel," I shouted and tears began to form in my eyes making everything blur to me.I could hear her pleading and begging and finally, I heard something crashing.It sounded like glass shattering and the screaming ended.

"Angela! Angel God Damn it! Please talk to me," I shouted banging my hands on the elevator door.

The line went dead and I panicked even more.I dialed back to her number only to find it switched off.

Please, God, Save her.

Please don't let anything happen to her.

I cried banging my head on my hand and Ron had to stop me from doing so.We took the car and went to the airport.I called Dad and told him everything.At least he was near to Angel than me and he could reach her before me.

John Winters.

"John Winters ," I spat his name out in venom and I promised to myself if he did anything wrong with my Angela then I would end his useless life and will make sure to let him rot in hell.

"It's all my fault," I whispered and cried silently putting on my seatbelts.We were about to take off.Ron had to comfort me every time I would cry or shout the whole way.

"I should have done something.I knew he was not a good person and I have heard his earlier cases where he was found forcing himself on women and manhandling women.I should've done something when I found him giving lustful looks to my Angel.My Angel.I swear to God if that skunk even lay his dirty hands on her then I wouldn't think before killing him with my own bare hands," I shouted and pushed Ron when he tried to calm me.

Finally, when we landed I was restless to go home.I didn't have any Idea what happened and I wanted nothing but just to see Angel fine.We took the car and the driver drove very fast obliged to my order.

When we reached my mansion, I saw reporters trying to get into my house but couldn't because they were held back by Police officers.My heart began to pound and I ran towards the main door.

"Hey! Sir wait! You can't go insid-" the police officer was cut off by Ron.I let him handle him and I could see the place was sealed by the police 'Police line Do not Cross' but I ignored it because my mind was somewhere else and I ran towards the house opening the door.

Everything was shattered on the ground and was out of its place.A strange vibe ran into my nerves making my inside tremble in anxiety.I saw blood everywhere and saw the coffee table shattered into pieces with its glass all over the place.Stains of blood were around it.

I could imagine a big struggling and fighting of two adults in this place.

A hand on my shoulder made me look behind me only to find Dad. His eyes looked sorrowful and I could see his eyes watering from the corners.

Dad handed me a laptop saying "Take a look at this. "

There was a CCTV video and I clicked on it to find Angel cleaning the kitchen.It was the video from my house CCTV camera.

I watched it silently wanting to know what really happened.I watched Angel drying her hands and walking towards the main door.She opened it and found no one and went out little more to see who it was.A thing caught my attention and my anger began to skyrocket.

When she went out John sneaked in behind her silently."That piece of shit,," I whispered clenching my jaw.I saw Angel dicing potatoes when he sneaked behind her and snaked his arms around her waist making her to jump in surprise.I saw everything that happened.Angel stabbing him, struggling with him and calling me, getting slaps from him, everything.

My heart began to bleed seeing the last scene where he pushed her on the coffee table which explains the crash sound that I heard earlier on my phone and then I saw her bleeding getting unconscious.

After that John Scooted her up in his arms and went out of the house.

My blood boiled and I threw the laptop in anger.

"Calm down son it's not the time for you to get angry.We need to find her.He took her somewhere and police are trying to search for them.We need to use our brain son" Dad tried to sooth me.

"I should've taken care of him that day in my house.It all started from that day," I cried.

"No," Ron said in a rage all of a sudden and handed me his tablet.

"Check this out, this video has been sent to me by the Venue's owner who thought we should see this for it could help us in our case.The video is from that day when you both came to Paris for that cancer event.This all started from there" he said sounding restless.

Dad came and sat beside me and I played on the video.It was also a CCTV footage.I saw Angel wearing a beautiful dress that evening and she looked beyond beautiful.I cursed myself for not realizing her worth that time.She met John and I could see her trying to avoid him.

Then she went towards the dinner hall and was drinking water when that jerk took a seat beside her.I could see her getting tensed around him and soon John went away from that place.

Angel made her way back to the hall's door when she was pulled by that skunk inside a room and the door was closed.We couldn't see anything that happened in that room because there was no CCTV video of that room.

After some minutes I watched the door opening and Angel came out running holding a vase in her hand and her using her other hand she tried to shield her skin because of her torn dress.

After some minutes, John walked out holding his bleeding forehead covering the part where he was bleeding with his hand.

"Ma'am hit him with that vase in order to get away," Ron said and I clenched my fist and bit down on it crying silently.

"The venue's owner realized who the lady was as he saw this video when they were actually searching for thief who broke in that day and stole the charity money. But as he saw this he forwarded it to us immediately."

"Son, we need to find her. God only knows what he will do to her" Dad said and by his tone, I knew he was trying hard not to lash out.

"He can't do anything to her.He won't do anything to her.He is not going to touch her," I said my voice dead.

"I'm going to trace him down from grounds and make sure he won't live a day more to see the sunlight and that's my promise to you and to Angel,," I said with determination to get Angela back.

"Prepare yourself John Winters because you are going to die soon, very soon because you tried to take away what's mine and you are going to get punished for it. "

I am going to make your life a Living Hell John Winters.

Chapter 47

I haven't sat in peace for six fucking hours.I have been continuously trying to track that bastard down.

My mind keeps going back to Angel.

I have called a friend of mine who is working in intelligence.He is helping me to track John down.

Six fucking hours! And yet there is no trace of that rat.

"Finally!" Nathan my friend shouted gaining our attention.

"What?," I asked growing impatient.

"That rat as you call him, who took away your wife just switched on his phone.It was for just for some seconds but it was enough for me to trace his location" he told us excited.

"Yes! Yes! Yes," I shouted in triumph.

"He is somewhere near the main church.Go get your woman," he said smiling and patted me on my shoulder.

"I will.Send the police there.I am going there alone.First I need to teach him a lesson,," I said to which he nodded and handed me a gun.

"I don't nee-"

"Keep it.I know you don't need this but still" he convinced me and I nodded running towards my car.

I drove off to that location and soon I reached the right place.I crossed the main church and found an isolated place.

The place was surrounded by many trees and in the middle, there was a warehouse.I knew that skunk would have kept my Angel there because he can't go anywhere or can't even think of leaving the country.

The cops had already set an alert in search of him. He couldn't escape the country that easily. I made sure of it.

I parked my car far away and got out of my car and made my way sneakily.I reached the main door but I knew it wouldn't be a good choice to enter directly from the main door.

I searched for any other way to enter in and found the perfect spot.I sneakily went towards the back door and peeped in to finally see my Angel.

She was tied down to a chair.Her hands were tied behind her and her legs were tied.A duct tape was wrapped around her mouth to prevent her from shouting and her clothes were soaked with blood.

My eyes began to water seeing her condition. She was in pain. I could see that. She was tired. I could feel that.Her eyes were closed and I knew she needs to get to the hospital as soon as possible.

Her condition was worse than an animal and I want nothing but to hold her in my arms.

My blood boiled when that rat came into my sight.

Chapter 48

He was pacing around the room and was sweating. He looked angry and irritated. Then he made his way towards my Angel and slapped her hard. I clenched my jaw and my fist, angrily when she opened her eyes and began to weep.

"Your bloody husband has made the police to bite my ass and here you are sleeping peacefully. You whore." He snapped at her making her cower away from him.

"Didn't I say you to give me what I want and I would have gone away and would have left you alone but NO you had to call your husband and let him bite my ass," he said grabbing her hair.

"Fine! If that's what you want then let's be it. I will finish what I have started" he said his voice dead.

Angel's eyes were widened and tears were continuously running down her cheeks. She was pleading him and begging him with her eyes but it was of no use.

I was beyond angry when I saw him advancing towards her opening his belts. He began to touch her and tried to rip away her blouse.

That's it.

I couldn't take it anymore and I began to see red. Only with one kick, the door flew open gaining both of their attention.

Angel's eye widened and I could see relief wash through her eyes seeing me whereas John was beyond angry and he ran towards me fiercely.

He flew his fist towards my face but I was fast and dodged his blow, hitting him right on his chest with my fist making him huff out air. I kicked him again on his chest and it was enough for him to lose his balance and he fell on the floor with a thud sound.

I looked at Angel to see her crying, her voice coming out muffled due to the tape. Her cleavage was on display because that rat has managed to open her blouse's button. I ran towards her and got rid of the tape from her mouth wanting to hear her voice.

"Xavier," she whispered crying.

I closed my eyes finally able to hear her voice and said "Angel."

"Please take me back home I don't want to stay here," she whispered crying even more.

I wiped her tears and untied her hands and legs. I was just going to button up her blouse when that Rat hit me on my head making my world spin.

"Xavier!" Angel cried holding me.

He was going to attack me again but I kicked his legs making him kiss the ground again. He groaned and tried to stand but I spun around kicking him on his face. I was ready to kill him and I wanted revenge for what he did to Angel.

The scene what he did to her back in my house replayed in my mind and I lost it beating him with all my force.

"Xavier!" Angel shouted.

"Xavier please stop it. It's enough. You are going to kill him. Please don't do this. Please. Please stop. For me" her last sentence made me stop but I kicked him one last time and went back to Angel.

"Xavier!" Angel shouted looking behind me. I was fast and kicked back spinning around making him fall backward. He stood up again and was ready to hit me with a rod which he got nearby but the sounds of firing guns stopped him.

After that everything happened in a slow motion. I saw him bleeding and he loosed his grip on the rod letting it fall. His eyes were wide and he looked like he was in great pain. Then he fell with a thud sound on the floor. Blood bleeding out of his body. His body lied limp on the floor.

He huffed out air and we watched as his breathing stopped. He was dead.

I looked towards the door to see police officers pointing their guns towards his body. They shot him.

Dad was standing beside them looking at us with his worried eyes. My mind flew back to Angel and I ran towards her.

I quickly buttoned up her blouse and finally, I was able to hug her.

"You came? You came for me," she cried whispering on my chest.

"Of course. I would have come wherever you were. Nobody can take you away from me and I will follow you everywhere you go," I whispered back my words laced with only truth.

Soon I felt her taking deep breaths and she grew limp on my arms.

"Angel! Angela ," I panicked shouting at her to open her eyes.

"Sir we need to take her to the hospital" an officer advised and it was enough for me to scoop her up in my arms and run to my car.

I took her to Hospital and the doctors began to check her.

We were sent out of the room by the nurse and we had to wait outside of the room for the Doctors.

Finally, the doctor came out and I restlessly walked to him. "How is she?," I asked.

"She is alright sir. She has lost her lots of blood to which we have given her the blood drip and there were some pieces of glass stuck in her back which we had to take out and we have already treated all her wounds. She is just tired and has lost her strength probably because of struggling and fighting without eating anything. But don't worry she will get better eventually. She needs rest" he patted on my shoulder and went away.

I sighed in relief and made my way towards the room. I entered the room and saw a blood drip attached to her hand and she was changed to Hospital gown. Her forehead was bandaged and her eyes were close.

I silently went towards her and sat on the stool holding her hand.

I sighed and kissed her hand whispering "You were this close to killing me, You know that? The things you do to me Angela Knights. You had me wrapped your finger. I want to stay in your heart like you do in mine. I want you to feel my every breath like I can feel yours. I want to be more than just friends with you Angel.You stole my heart and you took it away with you. I got to know about my feelings when today you were taken away from me. I am sorry that I was a fool not to understand your worth but now when I do, I want to be your husband. I want to see my children with you and most importantly I want to come back home only to be in your arms," I whispered again kissing her hands.

I stood up and leaned over her whispering in her ear "You know why? Because I love you. I am in Love with you and there's nothing I can do about it. I love you with all my life and I promise you I am going to make you mine very soon" with that I kissed her on her lips and kept my head on her chest listening to her steadied and soothing heartbeat.

You are going to Love me back.

You will only belong to me.

Forever and ever.

Chapter 49

Xavier

"Xavier, When can we go home?" she asked as I helped her walk towards her bed from the bathroom.

"Soon! After you better" I told her as I made her sit comfortably on her hospital bed. She was still dressed in her hospital gown and her hand still had that intravenous needle attached to it on the back of her hand.

"But I am already better, and I want to go home," she chided.

I chuckled at it and tilted my head amused by her behavior.

"So you think you are better now?," I asked raising an eyebrow and she shook her yes.

"Let's see then,," I said and I poked her side which made her wince and immediately she glared at me.I raised my hands in the air in mock surrender.

"Sorry! I was just checking," I said and chuckled when she mumbled something to herself.

"Well? Did you get your answers? About being," I air quoted the word "better" to which she gave me a sarcastic smile and crossed her arms across her chest.

"Fine!," she scowled at me.

I laughed a little on her scowling face and walked towards the stand and poured the soup into the bowl from the thermos flask.

"No! No! Not again!," she whined seeing me pour the soup for her.

"Then what else do you wish to eat milady?," I asked amused at her reaction.

"French Fries," she said dreamingly.

"Okay! Sure! get better and the day I see no scars on your skin you will get to eat whatever you like and want.Actually, I will make them for you and we can eat them together," I told her from my shoulder and heard her huffing at me.

"Xavier!," she groaned and I just shrugged my shoulders.

"Now cmon! Open your mouth," I said holding the spoon filled with soup for her.

"Hahaha?," she said and grinned.

"Angela!," I said sternly pouring the soup back in the bowl and stirring it a little.

"You don't need to feed me! I can do that of my own, you know," she said which made me roll my eyes at her childishness.

"Sure you can! Now open your mouth," I told her warning her with my eyes to argue with me.She seemed to get the warning and she smiled sheepishly finally obliging to what I said.

I made her drink the whole bowl of soup without hearing her complaints of how it tastes, and how it lacked salt and pepper and what not.

"Finally!," I sighed seeing now empty bowl.

"Now take your med and rest,," I said as I kept the bowl aside and took her medicines out from the paper bag for her to take.

I gave her the meds and a glass of water.She grimaced seeing the syrup and gulped it down turning up her nose which made me chuckle.

"Ew! bitter,," she frowned.

"I know," I mimicked her tone making her mock glare at me.

Suddenly, we were interrupted by the door of the room opening with people walking in crowding the place with their presence.I looked at them to see three men and a woman walking towards Angel seeming worried and concerned.

As soon as they soon Angel awake and sitting on the bed, their facial expression changed to a relief one and I recalled them as Angel's family and the woman were perhaps from one of her close acquaintance.

"Angie my sweetheart!," I recognized the man as Angela's father.

He hugged his daughter and I smiled seeing their bonding as Angela giggled and hugged her father back.

"Ow! Ouch!" Angel winced and I was fast on my feet stepping beside her.

"She is hurt.Please remove your hands from her back," I said and as soon as I said that her father's eyes widen and he immediately his retreated his hands back examining Angela's face.

"Oh, my gosh! I didn't know.I'm sorry" her father said worried clear in his voice.His eyes looked gloomy and damp seeing his only daughter in such condition.Somehow, I found myself feeling guilty thinking that if I had been with her from the beginning than this would have never happened to her.

Angela seemed to notice my expression and she raised her eyebrows at me questionably.

I shook my head and smiled at her assuring her that everything was fine.She seemed to nod at me but I knew she was anything but assured.

"It's okay dad," Angel said and placed her arms on his making him sit beside her on the bed.

"What is all this? We just a phone call from Mr.Brad Knights and we were informed about you and your condition" Lucas said as he raked his hand through his hair.

"Are you alright? What really happened?" he asked eagerly which made Angel and I exchange glances at each other.

I nodded at her and she sighed putting her head on her father's shoulder.

"Don't worry! I am fine know," she said and after that, she filled them with all the events and incidents that happened to her.

"That Bastard!," I saw Danny Carson losing his temper.

He clenched his teeth and his palms were balled into a fist ready to punch someone.

"How dare he hurt my sister" he sneered and somehow I scratched the back of my neck.

"What will he think if he ever comes to know the ways I treated his sister," I wondered.

"Don't worry. The matter has been taken care of by the police and Mr. John Winters will no longer be a problem for Angela," I said and looked as he nodded visibly relaxing upon hearing that.

"Sweetie we were really worried," Mr. Carson said looking sad.

"Yeah! We are meeting you after a long time and we are seeing you in this condition," the woman said as she came near Angela and hugged her softly trying not to hurt her.

"Oh, Emily!" Angela said hugging her back.

"It's all my fault.I am responsible for all this tha-," I said but I was cut off by Angela.

"Dad if he was out on his business trip to England for an important meeting.He was supposed to come back after two days but he managed to get me on time, saving me from that man.He saved me, dad.He saved my life!" Angel took my side and everyone looked between us.

"We know. You don't need to feel guilty Mr. Knig-," I intervened saying "Please call me Xavier,," I said and he nodded unsurely and looked at Angela who just smiled at him.

"Uh. . Thank you for saving my daughter Xavier" Mr. Carson said and I smiled in return.

"We are grateful to you for saving Angela. If it wasn't for you reaching in time then God only knows what would have happen-" he paused and looked at his daughter with teary eyes.

"We are in debt to you and your father. You both have helped us in our worst conditions" he said with sincerity in his voice.

"Angel is my wife and I would have gone to any extent to save her,," I told them the truth.

"Still! We will remain grateful to you. Always" Lucas said smiling at me and Angel.

Chapter 50

"My sweetie has always complimented how you always take care of her Xavier," Emily said and I glanced towards Angela who just gave me a shy smile and hid her face hugging her father which made everyone chuckled at her.

But me, my heart swelled with even more love for her than I already had for her.I still can't believe the ways I treated her and yet here she was still saving me and taking my side.

I excused myself from there as everyone began to chatter with her and I thought to give them some family time while me, I wanted to get away from their because I was fighting with my own feelings towards her.The love was growing inside me day to day and I was growing even more impatient wanting to know or even to have the slightest idea how she felt for me.

"Damn!," I cursed raking a hand through my hair as I leaned against the wall just outside of her room.

"Everything alright son?," I saw my father walking towards me warily looking at my disheveled state.

"No!," I sighed wearily as I hauled myself to my feet.

"Hmm?" he looked confused.

"Dad where did you find her?," I asked as I cross my arms across my chest.

He looked at me still confused waiting for me to finish.

"That woman has managed to made me fall hard for her," I finished and watched as he looked at me baffled and soon his face had his usual smirk plastered as he gave me a knowing look.

I knew what that look means.

It means you are whipped.

I looked at Angel to find her already staring at me.

"What?," I asked raising an eyebrow.

"I never said my gratitude to you for saving me," she paused and then said: "Thank you. "

"Only Thank you?," I asked taking a sit on the chair next to her.

Everyone after visiting her had left now and now I was alone with her in the room.

"What else?," she frowned.

I smiled and leaned towards her "I want something else," I whispered touching her frown with my finger.

"And what is that?," she whispered back.

"I don't know.Maybe a kiss," I said smirking seeing her eyes widen.

"Xavie-," I cut her off placing my finger on her lips.

"Sssh, just a kiss will do," I whispered seductively.

She gulped visibly and removed my finger from her lips.She started to lean forward and I waited for her to kiss me.She leaned more forward towards my lips but as soon as she was near my lips she changed her direction and pecked me on my cheek and went back to sleep covering her face with the pillow.

"Hey! that wasn't a kiss," I whined and shook her to get up.

"You didn't tell me to kiss where? So I did what I wanted.I'm sleeping Good Night Mr.Knights" her voice came out muffled because of the pillow.

"Not fair!," I said but smiled at her cuteness.

"Good Night Mrs.Knights," I mimicked her tone again making her to glare at me.I shrugged my shoulders and smirked at her.

After four days, she finally got a discharge from the hospital.

"Finally! I'm going home" Angel clapped her hands excitedly.

"Yeah Yeah Now don't run,," I said in a stern voice seeing her jumping and squealing in excitement.

"As you say Captain," she saluted me.

"I think your Medicines has affected your brain,," I said in a teasing tone seeing her excitement.

She stopped in her tracks and glared at me "Please!," she said narrowing her eyes.

"You know your name should be Godzilla, not Angela.It suits you well," I said teasing her more.

She stomped her feet and pouted crossing her arms on her chest "Mr.Knights!"

I laughed and escorted her out of the hospital towards the car and we drove back home.

Chapter 51

As soon as we came back she was tackled in a hug by Lucy who was really worried about her.

"Sweetie I miss you.I got really scared when I came to know what happened with you.I'm really sorry.It's all my fault.I should have been there with you that day when Mr.Knights was away.I shouldn't have left you alone," she cried.

"Relax Lucy. No one knew that it was going to happen and I was the one who gave you the day off.So it's not your fault" Angel said wiping away Lucy's tear and patting her back.

"Okay, now you two. Let's get inside," I said helping Angel to walk inside.

As soon as we reached inside the living room Angel stopped in her tracks."Everything is changed," she whispered looking at the new interior.

"Of course I renovated it. I thought you would like it," I said pursing my lips.

"Of course I like it. Thank you," she said and hugged me sideways. I hugged her back and helped her going into her room.

She went towards her dressing table and sat before the mirror.

"What are you doing?," I asked confused.

"I want to brush my hair. I haven't brushed it properly from the day I was admitted to the hospital," she said looking at me from the mirror and started brushing her hair.

I went to her and took her brush away from her hand.

"Xavier What are yo-," I cut her off and said "I want to brush your hair.Let me do it," I said looking at her in the mirror.

She smiled and said "Okay."

I smiled back and started to brush her hair.It was so soft and silky.I loved her hair.I brushed her hair properly and tied it and kept it sideways of her shoulder.

"I'm done.I guess," I said and she smiled at me.

"Doctor has advised you still need rest and yeah you still can't eat oily foods.No, don't start whining now.It's for your own good.I have already instructed Lucy not to cook oily foods," I said sternly helping her in her bed.

"How many days?," she complained shaking my arms.

"Till you don't get better,," I said and kissed her on her forehead.

"OKAY," she huffed but smiled at me.

"Yes Okay," I said and sat beside her on the bed staring at her face. I don't know for how many seconds or minutes I sat there staring at her like a Pervert but I couldn't help it. I always get mesmerized only looking at her eyes and her features. My gaze was Intense and I knew I was starting to affect her too.

She looked at me silently and averted her gaze nervously. I knew she was getting nervous because of my gaze.

"Xavier?," she said silently.

"Hmmm?," I hummed still not able to avert my face.

"Why are you staring at me like this?," she asked nervously.

"Why? Can't I stare at my own wife?," I whispered back.

She didn't say anything but pursed her lips.

"Am I making you uncomfortable Angela?," I questioned whispering.

"N-No,," she said shaking her head negatively.

"Then What's with your stammering?," I whispered leaning towards her making her bent towards the pillow.

"I-It's Not-Nothing," she stammered.

I nodded and said a quiet "Sure."

I smirked when I saw her breathing rising and Knew I have started to affect her which I wanted.

I leaned towards her face and whispered in her ears seductively "Take rest" with that I kissed her cheeks and got off from the bed.

I laughed when I saw her red as tomato face which she hides under the duvet.

"So cute," I cooed poking her above the duvet.

"Xavier!," she shouted under the duvet.

I laughed and went out of the room closing the door and went towards my room.

I took a shower and whispered to myself looking at myself in the mirror "Time to start the mission! To make you fall for me. To make you mine Mrs. Knights."

I smiled to myself and jumped on the bed crossing my hands under my head and muttered "Mrs.Angela Xavier Knights. "

"The name sounds so perfect," I chuckled at the thought.

"Hey, I have taken the day off today. Do you have any plans for today?," I asked Angel excitedly.I wanted to spend the day with her.

She looked up at me stirring her food and nodding her head she said "No. "

"Good. Let's go out today," I said rubbing my hands ecstatically.

"Go out? But where?," she asked raising her eyebrow.

"Umm. I don't know. Maybe for shopping?," I advised walking to her behind the kitchen counter where she was cooking.

"Shopping? But I don't even need to buy anything," she said and turned towards me holding the wooden spatula in her hand.

"Aye, we will see that. Now go and get ready, we will leave in 30 minutes," I said leaving no room for a no.

"Bu-," she whined but I cut her off "No buts unless you want me to spank your. . ," I trailed off looking down at her butt. Her face turned fifty shades of red and she dashed out of the kitchen towards her room while I grinned like an Idiot.

"Oh, how much would I enjoy spanking her butt,," I thought, gazing towards her lower half while she walked away swaying her hips.

Chapter 52

I know I have grown to be a pervert but I can't help it. She is irresistibly hot. Now a days I have grown bolder towards her. I would speak of my mind, what I think about her and she does only one thing.

Avoid me and then she would run away.

Just like now, she avoided me and chose to run away.

I sighed, keeping both my hands on my hip and looked up. God, when is she going to warm up around me? Does she even like me? Little bit? Little. .

I have even started to signal or indicate her intentionally thinking that she would notice my interest in her but no, she would only grow nervous around me and then she tends to avoid me. But most importantly, she runs away. She should be in Olympics.

Whenever I try to get near her she would run away giving a lame excuse like somebody is calling her, when there is nobody in this God damn big house or she would say that she has some important work to do.

I rubbed my face using my hands and went upstairs to my room to change. I changed into denim jeans and wore a white T-shirt underneath my gray sweatshirt. I chose to wear converse today because I wanted to give some comfort to my feet because it has gotten tired of wearing business leather shoes. I combed my hair giving it a just out of bed look and took my wallet, phone, car keys and my watch and went out of the room and waited for her in the living room.

She came down after 5 minutes wearing black jeans and a faded T-shirt underneath her red checked sweatshirt and today she chose to wear her black ballet shoes. As usual, no makeup and left her hair half tied.

I liked it.

"I'm ready,," she told me and I nodded. We took our Lamborghini Gallardo and drove off to the shopping mall.

On reaching there, I parked my car in the parking lot and we made our way towards the mall."Let's see what we must buy,," I told her and took her hand intertwining her fingers with mine and we walked inside a jewelry shop.

"Why are we going inside a jewelry shop?," she whispered restraining me from going inside.

"To buy you some jewelry,," I said in a duh tone and dragged her inside.

"But I don't need an-," I cut her off sending her a look for no argument and dragged her in.

Strange! Here I am the one who is dragging her and there was a day when women would drag me inside this shop to make me buy them jewelry.

Woman!

I can never understand them.

A lady immediately came and smiled at both of us saying "Welcome sir and ma'am.I am the Manager of the shop.May I know what are you looking for?," she asked in her professional tone.

"Show me some necklaces or pendants,," I said in my cold tone.I knew I was being harsh but I just can't help it.I'm only soft when it comes to Angel or my family.

"Okay Sir, there my sales girl will help you,," she said and called for someone.I nodded and went towards the direction where she directed us to go.

"Xavier I told you already, I don't need them and they are really expensive.I don't want them.Please let's go," she tried to pull me towards the exit but I didn't budge.

"What do you mean by expensive? Did you forget who I am? And what about the money I transferred to your account every month? What did you do with them?," I asked raising an eyebrow.She stopped dragging me and gave me a sheepish smile.

"What? Oh, did you used all of it? It's okay if you used it.It's your after-," she cut me off.

"No! No! No! I didn't use them in fact, I never touched them,," she said laughing nervously.

Chapter 53

"What? Why? Didn't I tell you to use them?," I asked crossing my hands on my chest.

"I-I uh I didn't feel like using them,," she said nervously looking here and there.

Is she serious? How did she even manage without money all those months?

"Then how did you manage all these months without using the money I gave you to use?," I asked eagerly. She smiled at me and shrugged her shoulders "A part time job."

I inhaled deeply and closed my eyes pinching the bridge of my nose. Oh *Man!*

"You are unbelievable. I gave you money for your use and you didn't even touch them. Are you out of your mind. I'm your husband Angela and you should have told me that," I said irritated and annoyed at the fact that she didn't consider it important to inform me or even use my money.

She bit down on her lip and looked to her left towards nothing.

"Why are you annoyed at her? It was you after all for whom she had to go through so much" I heard my inner self and regretted even being annoyed at her.

I exhaled out air and relaxing a bit asked: "Are you still working?"

She shook her head negatively.

I sighed and rubbed my face with my hand and held her chin and made her look at me."Don't do that,," I said and released her lip from her teeth using my fingers.

"Why didn't you use my money?," I whispered to her.

"You and your dad already have done so much for me and for my family.I didn't want to be a bur-," I cut her off putting my finger on her lips.

"Is that because of my statement from our wedding night that made you not to touch the money?," I asked suddenly remembering the harsh words I told her on our wedding night.

You are nothing but a gold digging bitch who doesn't have any self- respect or self-dignity and is only after my money.

I closed my eyes and sighed out loud keeping my hands on my hips.

"Why am I annoyed at her? I am the one because of whom she had to work.It was my fault.If only I wasn't so judgemental beforehand, it never would have happened," I thought to myself and regretted even saying those harsh words to her.

"I'm sorry," I blurted out and looked towards her. She looked towards me with a cringed forehead.

"It's all my fault that you had to work. I am the one who made your life hell and you had to go through so much because of me,," I said and held her hands. "I'm sorry Angela,," I said again with sincerity.

"No! No, it's not your fault. I wanted to work and I did the part time. It's not your fault," she said and squeezed my hands.

Of course, she would never let me feel bad.

I smiled and said "I want to amend my mistakes. I want to be your husband and you are my responsibility. Please let me be your support," I asked hoping she would at least give me a chance.

She nodded and smiled at me, stealing my already stolen heart away with her. I pulled her and hugged her tight. She became stiff and stood there robotically. She still isn't comfortable with me hugging her.

I sighed and released her and said "Let's do some shopping. Shall we?," I asked giving her my hands to take.

She took my hands and we walked towards the counter. The saleswoman was already present there and when she saw us she showed her polished teeth to us, more to me.

I saw her buttons of her shirt were opened and she pushed her breast more up to gain my attention.

Seriously. Ugh, Give me a break.

She smiled seductively at me and batted her fake eyelashes. She held her hands out for me to shake "Hello Sir, I'm Linda and I will help you to chose your desirable jewelry,," she said in an irritating voice and looked at Angel giving her a glare.

What the hell. How dare she glaring at my Angel.

Angel didn't seem to mind it but I did. I didn't give her my hands and glared at her which immediately made her nervous. She withdrew her hand back and said: "Are you looking something for your sister sir?," she asked looking at Angel.

She called her my sister. The fuck? The nerve of her.

"Does she look like my sister to you?," I asked through gritted teeth.

"She is my wife and it will be great if you stop drooling at me and show me some necklaces or pendants,," I said deadly making her gulp audibly and she nodded before dashing towards the shelf to bring us some necklaces and pendants.

"That was harsh" Angel whispered to me.

I smiled and wrapped my arm around her waist catching her off guard and pulled her close to me.

"Oh, believe me, I can be harsh in many other things too," I whispered seductively in her ear and she gulped audibly and tried to pry my hand away from her waist. When she failed, she stood stiffly in my arm and I fought with myself not to laugh at loud seeing her reaction.

Linda or Binda or was it Tinda whatever her name was, came back holding many jewelry boxes in her hands and she kept it down on the counter but purposely bending more to show me her cleavage.

Can't she stop making a fool out of herself?

I sighed and began to choose some jewelry for Angel. I wanted something expensive and beautiful for her.

Normally, when I used to bring other women with me, I would usually stand at a corner going through my e-mails. They would choose the most expensive jewelry from the shop and I would only pay for it.

But today, it's different. I want to choose something for Angel. I want to make her happy.

I looked at her and saw her uninteresting looking at the jewelry.

"You don't like them?," I asked worried that she doesn't like them.

"No, it's not that. You choose whatever you like and I will take that. I'm not good at selecting jewelry," she told me smiling.

I smiled and began to search for a perfect piece. Finally, I found one. It was a simple necklace with a diamond in its middle. It looked elegant and beautiful. It had lines of platinum holding the diamond in its place and near the diamond, patterns of flowers were elegantly crafted. I took it and asked Angel to zip open her sweatshirt. She did and I placed the necklace on her neck.

"Perfect," I whispered seeing that it perfectly made her skin glow. I gave it to the sales girl and asked her to pack it. She nodded and kept it aside and showed us some pendants.

I wanted a Pendant for Angel which would explain her personality and show the other males that she is taken.

I have marked many men noticing her and giving her lustful looks while she remained oblivious to their looks. She is beautiful and she has this kind and friendly aura around her which attracts many men like bees to nectar much to my dislike.

This was the reason why that John so desperately wanted to have her. But she is mine and I want the world to know that. Nobody can go near her or let alone lay a finger on her till I'm alive. I will definitely ruin that person.

I found a chain with a round shaped pendant and in the middle, there was a small half heart. I looked at it with a frown "Why half shape heart?," I thought to myself.

"Sir, that's for the couple use and it's Tiffany. Here it's the other piece of it. If you join this two pendants with each other it will complete the shape of the heart" Linda informed me giving me the other piece.

"Perfect," I grinned triumphantly and showed it to Angel.

"It's beautiful," she whispered taking it in her palm.

"Not as you," I whispered and she looked up at me with a questioning look "Did you say something?," she asked .

Chapter 54

"No,," I said and took the chain from her hand and put it around her neck.I leaned closer to her and sided her hair to a side and did the chain.

I came back to my position and whispered "Beautiful," I said the word more to her.

She assumed it for the chain and smiled. I took the other chain and showed it to her "It's for me," I said and wore the chain.

She smiled and helped me wearing the chain.

I'm growing to be more clichè day by day.

But I don't mind.

I paid for the necklaces and the chains and we went out of the shop. I dragged her again to a Shoe shop where I made her buy many shoes. I avoided giving her heels because she was already tall but she still reached my shoulder. I like intimidating her with my height and I was worried that those heels might hurt her feet.

She insisted on buying a pair of stilettos which I let her take but only one pair.

Then we went to Dress shop. It was my favorite. I made her try many dresses and rejected many in order to see her trying more dresses.

As I am the biggest pervert of the century, I made her try a revealing sexy red dress which barely covered her chest and came only to her mid thigh because of her height. While she was complaining the dress was too short I took the opportunity to drool at her cleavage and ogle at her long toned legs because of her daily Jogging.

I intentionally made her wear that dress and didn't let her come out of the trying room. I didn't want other hungry males to see the beauty of her which is only meant for me to see and feel.

Dirty things surfaced my thoughts and all I wanted was to rip that dress off her skin and malice her beauty right then and there in the room but I knew I wasn't that lucky to do such intimacy yet to her.

"Damn!," I cursed feeling my hard on.

She would only panic and she might get a heart attack. I roamed my eyes for the last time on her curvaceous body and saved her picture in my mind and asked her to take off the dress and try a new one.She seemed to relax a little and pushed me out of the room.

Oh, How much I wished to see her. .

Does this thought make me a pervert?

But I'm her husband.

I made her buy many dresses and some shorts and T-shirts then we went out of the shop, me holding many bags in my hands. She insisted on holding some bags which I denied not wanting her to load herself.

I came to a halt when we were outside of the Victoria Secrets. I looked at the shop and back at Angel who was busy looking inside a bag. I looked at a model who wore a sexy and revealing lingerie and I pictured Angel on her place. Immediately I turned on and might I say very hard.

I looked at Angel to see her already looking at me strangely then she looked at the shop. Her eyes widened and she thought we were going inside to buy some lingerie. I watched as her cheeks grew red and she acted as if she didn't know anything looking the other way.

I grinned and held the bags in one hand and in my other hand took hold of her hand and dragged her inside the shop.

"No, No Xavier! I'm not going inside. I don't wan-," I didn't listen to her and dragged her inside.

The sales girl came to us and I put my bags on the couch and asked the sales girl to show a sexy black lingerie for Angel. She nodded and went away.

"I don't understand. I don't need those and why are we here?" Angel asked nervously, her breathing uneven.

"Of course you need those. Come on, you are my wife and one day you are surely going to need those," I said boldly grinning at her.

She looked at me with widened eyes and her mouth opened to say something but she couldn't utter a word because of my sudden bold words. I knew she never expected me to say those words to her.

She is the 'good girl' after all but too bad I'm the bad boy and I will go up to any extent to show her that she belonged to me.

The sales girl came back holding a lacey black silk lingerie and held it before Angel's eyes saying "How is it ma'am?"

I saw Angel closing her mouth and opening it again. Words not forming in her mouth. "Oh, she will try it now and we will see how it looks," I said smugly making her already widened eyes wider.

"WHAT?," she finally said and the sales girl pushed her inside the trial room. "Wait! no, no, listen I don't want t-," she was cut off by me standing before her.

"Try it and let me see unless you want me to go inside and help you to strip,," I said seductively making her gulp. She snatched the lingerie from the girl and went inside.

"This is blackmailing," I heard her.

I waited for her for some minutes and I began to think that maybe I was taking things fast with her. I needed to slow down a little because she still isn't comfortable around me hugging her and let alone touching her.

The door opened making me stop my thinking and my mind went blank. There stood my princess wearing a sexy as hell black lingerie which displayed her curvy waist and toned stomach, never ending long legs and beautiful body. The lingerie only displayed the cleavage of her breast and it was strapless. The black color perfectly made her skin to look fairer and the sexiest part was the chain which I gave her. It ended in the middle of her cleavage and she looked gorgeously out of the world. The lingerie was a piece of silky cloth which only shielded her private parts. It was strapless and the panty joined the bra by a thin line of cloth joining together from her waist.

Chapter 55

It was too mesmerizing for me and I found myself unable to move. She was nervous, I could say that by only looking at her chest heaving with her uneven breath and I found myself drowning in her beauty.

I was pulled out of my world when I saw group of young males coming inside the shop. Angel gave a panicked look and I immediately went inside the trying room and closed the door pushing Angel inside with me.

I don't want any other male to see her. She is forbidden to show her beauty to others. She is only mine.

I closed the gap between us and sandwiched her with the wall and my body. I trailed my finger on her shoulder and leaned near her ear making her grow more nervous.

"I said you are my Wife and one day you are going to need these. Mark my words, one day not today. I respect your decision and when you are comfortable enough to give yourself willingly to me, I will wait till then," I whispered huskily in her ear making her hold into my shirt.

I was happy that she was starting to get affected by my words and I truly respect her. I won't force myself on her only to make her mine. I wanted to own her soul. Her body. Her mind and her heart. I should be the only one in her heart, nobody else.

She relaxed visibly and I think I saw her smiling because she looked the other way. Nevertheless, I couldn't restrain myself from kissing her cheek affectionately and pushed myself off her.

"Next time I don't think I can control myself,," I said to her and she gasped when I held her by her waist and pulled her to me.

"God help me!," I whispered and finally kissed her on her lips. I knew it as the first time for her when I'm kissing her when she is on her senses. Last two times was when she was drunk and was in the hospital, unconscious.

I kissed her passionately showing her that I would wait for her and squeezed her waist. She moaned and began to kiss me back. I pulled her closer to me and tilted my head to gain more access. I started to kiss her roughly by pushing her to the wall. She wrapped her hands around my neck and one of her hand played with my hair. I began to trail my hands feeling her every curve and kissed her hungrily. Our lips perfectly molded with each other and the tingles I felt when I was kissing her was like magic. Never in my life have I felt tingles running down my nerves when I would kiss a girl.

I had to stop myself because if I didn't, I knew that I would do something which I would definitely regret later. I pushed myself away from her and looked at her. Her lips were red and were swelled because of my rough kiss. I smirked when I saw her skin began to grew red. She was breathing heavily and I wanted to kiss her again seeing her chest move while breathing.

"Next time," I whispered and came out of the room closing the door. After some minutes she came out wearing her clothes and she handed the lingerie to the sales girl. "We will take it," I said to the sales girl and she took it to the counter for billing.

I looked at Angel who looked flushed and I went to the counter to pay for the lingerie.

I heard some wolf whistles and I looked around to find that group of young guys looking at Angel and giving her lustful looks. My blood boiled and certainly, I had a feeling to kill each one of them. Only if the killing was legal.

Call me possessive, but I don't like sharing what's mine with others. I angrily marched towards them and when they saw me coming towards them I could see fear flickered in their eyes because they were young very young probably teenagers. I was really close to them when Angel stood in front of me blocking them from my view.

"Angel Move!," I gritted out.

"Please leave it, they are kids. Please let's go," she whispered her eyes showing fear.

"Move!," I said and looked at the boys seething with anger.

Angel didn't budge and held my arms "please," she whispered .

I felt her hands trembling.

"I will leave this place only if you let me kiss you,," I said not averting my gaze from the boys.I knew she would say no and I would be able to beat the shit out of them. I only said that to avert Angel's mind from me.

But as always the unexpected happened she nodded making me to look at her by holding my face in her hands.

I liked the deal but still, I wanted to teach them a lesson but I didn't want Angel to fear me.But to like me.I sighed and pulled her closer to me and wrapped my arms around her waist.I glared one last time at the hormonal teenagers and took the bags and we both went out of the shop.

When we reached near the washroom I pushed Angel inside it and locked it making her gasp.I kept the bags above the basin and pulled Angel to me whispering

"Yes where were we?"

"Time to keep your promise Mrs Knights. "

And with that I kissed her again not caring where we were.

This is heaven.

Chapter 56

Angela

I don't understand Xavier. One second he is so sweet and warm and the next second he becomes an erupting volcano all angry and throwing tantrums. He seriously needs to control his anger. The boys who whistled at me were only kids. I didn't mind them because I knew it was of no use but Xavier, he bolted towards them in anger.

I have seen him fighting before and might I say he is a fierce fighter. The way he fought with John sent shivers down my spine. John didn't have any chance before him. I thought he was going to kill him that day though he was really killed by the cops; I was relieved that Xavier was not the one to kill him.

Xavier pushed me inside the washroom and began to kiss me. I don't understand what's with him in kissing me. I never expected affection from his side but the way he has started to treat me is really heart touching.

I have never been kissed before let alone hugged by a male who is not from my family or friends so, this is the reason why I became stiff whenever Xavier tends to hug me. I know that he is my husband but I never expected any bold statements for me from his mouth. He even declared that I am going to need those lingerie's one day in the near future. That means intimacy!

Xavier and me hav…

I blushed deep red and looked at Xavier who was talking with someone in his phone. We are currently sitting in the cafe, still in the mall. After so much of shopping we were hungry and we decided to eat in this cafe.

Xavier looked at me still talking with someone in his phone and raised an eyebrow because of my sudden blush. I think, he understood why I was blushing so hard because the next moment he began to grin. I averted my gaze to the other side and leaned back on my chair.

He soon stops his conversation and shoves his phone back into his pant pocket. Then he leaned from his chair towards me and whispered "what's with your red cheeks Angel? Were you thinking something dirty about me that made you blush so hard?" he whispered seductively which made me blush more and I shielded my face with my hands away from his sight.

"Aww you are so cute, you know that?" He cooed and tried to pinch my cheeks but I slapped it away making him to laugh out loud.

Please! God call me to you.

The waiter who was a young boy came and smiled at me. I smiled back and he asked our orders. I ordered a chocolate frappe and a sandwich. He wrote it down on his notepad and looked towards Xavier only to find him clenching his fists on the table and his jaws were locked. He was glaring at the waiter with a murderous look.

Again! What happened to him?

"What's with you smiling towards my wife?" he asked through gritted teeth.

"Xavier!" I whispered.

Not again.

"Same as she ordered for me" he gritted out to the waiter. The waiter nodded and dashed away.

"Xavier he was just doing his work. It's his duty to maintain a good relation with the customer," I said frustrated with Xavier's behavior and crossed my arms around my chest huffing.

"You don't have any Idea what types of look he was giving to you and I don't like it. Why did you even smile back at him? You rarely smile to me but you smiled at a stranger? Why?" Xavier asked arrogantly.

Is he being Serious?

I gave him a look not believing what he just said to me and shook my head. It is useless to explain him. Does he seriously want me to show arrogance to a waiter?

"Answer me Damn it," Xavier said banging his hand on the table.

Everyone's eyes were now on us and I began to feel nauseous. I don't like attention. I began to panic and I began to look here and there.

I think Xavier saw my condition because soon I heard screeching sounds of chair dragging and it was placed beside me. Xavier sat on it and took my hands and made me to look at him.

"Look! I'm sorry. I don't want to be harsh on you. After that John's incident I cannot trust anybody around you. Please try to understand. I'm really sorry" he said seriously and I saw sincerity in his eyes which made me to give him a small smile and nod my head at him assuring him that I understand.

He smiled and squeezed my hands "You don't have any Idea what you are capable of doing to me" he whispered to himself but I heard it.

What capable of?

Our orders were placed before us and the waiter dashed away as soon as he kept out plates.I guess he has a really bad encounter with Xavier.

We began to eat our food and occasionally we would talk about random things. When we were done Xavier paid and held the shopping bags and smiled at me "I guess we have done quite a shopping didn't we?" he asked and I raised an eyebrow whispering "we?"

He gave me a sheepish smile and said "Okay fine me, I did it."

I nodded and shook my head and took some of his bags and we began to exit the mall when he stopped walking. I frowned and was going to ask what was wrong but I stopped myself when I saw his facial expression. His face showed anger, betrayal and hurt. I looked towards the direction where he was looking and saw a woman. Might I say very beautiful woman who was shorter from me by 4 or 6 inches possibly and was smiling at a kid. She was holding a small girl's hand whom I guessed to be only 3 years old. They were buying balloons and were laughing.

I guess she was her mother. But I don't understand Xavier's expression towards them. The woman turned her head towards us and her eyes widened as soon as she saw us or more like when she saw Xavier. She tried to call Xavier but Xavier took hold of my hand and dragged me towards the parking lot.

I could sense his Anger which was radiating from him. But why was he so angry all of a sudden? Is it because of that woman?

"Xavier?," I tried to call him but he turned around and looked at me angrily "Shut up! just get inside the car" he snapped at me making me flinch.

I did as he said and kept quiet. He came and sat on his side and began to drive. "Xavie-," I again tried to ask what was wrong but he cut me off speaking deadly "Angela please don't ask me anything now. Just keep quiet," he said and concentrated on the road.

I don't understand his sudden change in his demeanor.

I kept my mouth shut and looked out of the window. Though he was harsh towards me but I knew he was in pain. I saw it in his eyes. His pain made him to speak harshly to me. I don't blame him though. Seeing his anger issues and sometimes pain in his eyes, I have come to the point that may be something big or painful has occurred in his past which has made him like this.

I looked out of the window and sat silently. I won't ask him anything, if he wants to share he can. But I won't ask him.

When we reached home I saw the clouds forming a deep color indicating that it was soon going to rain. Xavier directly bolted towards the house and he didn't even help me in carrying the shopping bags. I smiled to myself and looked at Xavier's retreating back.

I helped myself and with utmost difficulties got hold of each bags and went inside the house. Lucy came running to me and helped me in carrying the shopping bags.

"Oh, dear what's wrong with Sir? He seemed very angry" Lucy asked me worriedly.

"I don't know may be work problem,," I shrugged. I didn't want her to know what happened. If Xavier wants he can tell her himself.

"Can you bring juice to my room Lucy? I'm really tired," I said as I kept the bags on the sofa in the living room.

"Of course sweetie you go rest. I'll bring your juice and some snacks to your room," she said and went towards the kitchen.

I went towards my room and plopped on the bed looking towards the ceiling. I got up and sat near the window on the sofa seeing the dark clouds and rustling of leaves.

Chapter 57

Xavier

I can't believe it.

I saw her today.

She was so happy.

I saw that she has a daughter now. They both were so happy. She is still the same.

How dare she utter my name from her mouth?

How dare she?

She ruined my life but she looked so happy.

I can't take it. I cannot bear it.

I threw my files from the table in anger. I'm currently in my study room. I have locked myself in here from two hours.

The things she did to me flashed in my mind and my anger became to grow more and more.

How dare she showing me her face after so many years with a happy face and a kid in her hands.

It's been four years till I last saw her.

She was my best friend. I used to love her. She was not rich as I was but still, we were best friends. On our graduation day I proposed her and she rejected me saying she loved someone else.

I cried the whole night and mom has to sooth me all night. The next day I respected her decisions and asked her to remain my friend as it was before. But she surprised me, telling that she too loves me back. I was so happy that I thought I found the whole happiness of the world. She was my fiancé and we began to share an apartment living together.

One day, when I was tired coming back from my training, I found her naked and with none other but my other best friend Daniel. I came to know that she has been cheating on me with him from the day we got engaged. She claimed that she loved him and she didn't want to marry me.

I was so furious that I slapped her hard on her face when she had the audacity to kiss me and I yelled furious" How dare you? Who gave you the permission to play with my heart? Is this the reason why you never allowed me to pleasure you sexually? Because you loved him?," I threw them both out of my apartment and from then only, I never heard anything from them.

But soon I found that a heavy amount of cash was transferred to someone's account from my account.It was her.

I realized that she was only with me because of my money. Soon my mom passed away leaving me heartbroken. I was all alone. When I needed my two best friends the most they were away fucking each other probably laughing at my condition.

From then only I had this anger issue and trust problem. I fucked every girl thinking them as Gold diggers and they were really worse than her. She is the one whom I hate the most. I even despise her name.

She is Claudia Thatcher.

I hate her. She is the reason of all my pain and sufferings. She is the dark side of my life. Until She came.

My light. My Lost Love. My Healer. My Angel.

She is the reason why I began to smile and laugh again. She saved me from getting drown into darkness. She is my power. She is my weakness.

I sighed and rubbed my face with my hands.

"Shit!," I whispered.

"Shit ! Shit! Shit!," I groaned in annoyance when I recalled the way I behaved with her when I saw Claudia.She had no Idea why I was so angry all of a sudden and she tried to ask me but I, I snapped at her.

What is her mistake in this?

She didn't know anything that happened with me still she never questioned me about my sudden harshness.

She is so innocent. She is naive and I know she is far from what Claudia is. She is different from her in every ways and I know that she would never betray me.

Now when I think of this, I think that I never loved Claudia. I think I only liked her. She was a crush of mine. But Angela, she is my life. She is my true love and I will be damned if I let her go out my life.

I have to apologize to her. I have made uncountable mistakes before her. But she always tends to forgive me. I know there is a limit and I don't want to cross it.

I sighed and went towards the window. I saw that it has already started to rain. It's only 4 pm and it has started to grow darker outside.

Folding my arms on my back and smiled when I thought about Angel. I am like a teenager who found his first love whenever I was around her. I tend to smile, laugh, tease, and flirt when I'm around her. She is my hope. She is my gift for the prayers I did to god. She is my peace to my sufferings.

I looked out of the window and someone grabbed my attention. Immediately a smile appeared on my lips and my heart beat began to skyrocket when I saw the person twirling happily in rain.

I ran out of the room and towards the drawing room and opened the slider glass door.

I smiled and shouted "Hey! You are still weak. Come back here or you will catch a cold. "

She turned around and stared at me. She has changed into a white short dress which reached her thighs and she was all soaked because of the rain. She was the perfect picture of an Angel.

In fact, she was an Angel. My Angel.

"No! You come here," she shouted back.

"What?! No! You come here," I shouted back.

She began to laugh and she ran towards me "Hey watch out! You are bare foot. You will hurt yourself!," I yelled seeing her bare foot.

She shook her head and smiled "Nothing will happen to me. Now come," she gestured me to join her in the rain.

"No," I shook my head and crossed my hands.

She came to me and took my hand and dragged me to the rain.

"Wet! You are making me wet!," I yelled trying to shield myself from the rain putting my hands on my head.

She laughed at my statement and came towards me "I hate rain," I whispered to her.

"I love rain,," she whispered back.

"My mom used to tell me that rain can wash away all your pain and sufferings.So, why don't you let the rain to do that for you?," she asked looking at me.

The rain water dripping down her face.

"How do you know that I was in pain?," I asked mesmerized with her beauty.

She looked at me and shrugged her shoulders smiling at me. Though she didn't answer me, I knew she had started to feel my pain.

"Come here," I said opening my arms. She looked at me and wiped the water out of her face. Then she slowly came towards me and into my arms. I hugged her tight feeling her body against mine. I was so happy. Finally, I found my happiness.

"Angel?," I called her and she looked at me through her beautiful glassy blue orbs "I'm sorry," I whispered rubbing her cheeks with my palm. She smiled and I only noticed her lips. They were tempting me. They were calling me and I obliged to them.

I kissed her again holding her tight. We were still in the rain and I didn't care about it anymore. Tingles began to run down my skin and I held her tight to myself. My love was Intense towards her and my soul craved for her. Only her.

She wrapped her arms around my neck to steady herself and kissed me back.

You said the rain would wash away my pain and sufferings?

Wrong!

You are the one who took away all my pain and sufferings.

I love you.

Chapter 58

Xavier

I touched her soft and smooth skin feeling the tingles running down my skin, only by the mere touch. I looked into her blue orbs only to get myself captivated. She smiled at me and I couldn't help but notice her luscious lips stretching calling me to kiss her. I leaned towards her and kissed her possessively showing her that I am the only one whom she belonged to.

She kissed me back wrapping her hands around my neck, playing with my hair. I bit her lower lip asking for entrance which she allowed and our tongues started to mingle with each other.

The wildness and the passion grew within us and I pushed her against the wall making her hold on to my shirt tightly.I started to unbutton or more like ripped her shirt leaving her in a delicate red sexy bra and then I began to kiss her neck biting and sucking on it making her moan against my ear softly.

She started to help me with my shirt and soon I pushed her on the bed and started to pull down her loose pants but stopped when I heard a sound.

I jolted up from my sleep when I found my alarm on my phone ringing.I stopped it and wiped the sweat that formed on my forehead.

Another Dream!

I sighed rubbing my face with my palm.

How long will I have to suffer all these?

Every day I would wake up panting because of all my wild dreams. Getting a boner early morning is quite painful. Always the same one where I am kissing Angela passionately and we end up on the bed. While I proceed to strip her in thoughts of making love to her, the bubble of my dream bursts whenever the alarm buzzes.

But early morning dreams

I leaned on the headboard and crossed my arms on my chest. I groaned thinking that the person with whom I am having the most passionate night is just a door away from me.

I saw the time to its 5:15 AM in the morning.

"Shit!," I cursed and got out of the bed. I was planning to join Angel in Jogging. I have come to know that Angel is not always alone while jogging. That Dusty boy always joins her and I hate it. I

quickly got ready wearing my track pants and black vests. I took my headphones and wore my running shoes and went out of the room only to see Angel coming out of her room.

Perfect timing.

"Angel!," I called her when she didn't notice my presence. She looked back at me and with a smile walked towards me.

"You're up so early?," she asked looking at my attire.

"Yup. I will join you in jogging," I said rubbing my hands.

"You?," she asked pointing her finger towards me.

"Yes me. Now let's get going we are already late," I said and held her finger which she was pointing towards me and dragged her out of the house.

We both walked out of our house and soon started to jog when we reached the public park. She was wearing a neon pink tank top and a short black spandex with her running shoes. She began to lead me and I followed her plugging my headphones into my ear.

My favorite song Back to love was playing when I saw that Dusty boy joining us for the Jogging. He didn't seem to notice me because he ran directly like a dog towards Angel.

"Angie! Good Morning" he chirped completely ignoring me.

Again Angie!

"Good Morning!" Angel wished and turned to look at me still jogging.

"What are you doing here?" Dusty boy asked me with a sudden uproar in his voice.

"Can't you see? Jogging! Duh," I said glaring at him.

Idiot!

"Whatever!" he replied and began to jog with Angel.

He was jogging very close to Angel which I didn't like so, I jogged more like run towards them and blocked him by running in between them.

"What are you doing?" Dusty boy asked with an irritated face.

"Jogging!," I yelled on his ears when I marked Angel plunging her earphones in her ear.

I smirked seeing him cringing his nose and inserting his little finger into his ears and shaking his fingers dramatically making an annoyed face.

We jogged for what felt like 30 minutes and then went inside a cafe. I ordered a cold coffee while they both ordered their went out of the cafe.

"Why do you felt like jogging today?" Angel asked me nudging me by her elbow.

"I also need fitness, "I said nudging her back.

"No, you don't need to," she whispered to herself but I heard it and pushed her shoulder with mine playfully, wiggling my eyebrows. She frowned and pushed me back. We soon began to push each other playfully but stopped when we heard someone clearing his throat.

"What?," I snapped at Dusty boy. He scowled at my behavior and looked the other way.

"Sorry to interrupt your husband-wife moment but I need to go."

"Then go! Who is even stopping you?," I said rudely which made Angel nudge me on my stomach by her elbow.

"Yeah okay, bye," Angel said smiling at him to which he smiled and went away waving his hand like a school kid.

Stupid jerk!

We jogged back home and I went to my room to get a shower. I took a long refreshing bath and got ready for my office when my phone rang.

"Hello?," I asked seeing the unknown number.

"Xavier buddy!"

"Dominic? What happened to your number?," I asked recognizing the voice from the other side.

"In my pant pocket. The battery is dead. It's my fiancé's number" he said happily.

"Fiancé? Whoa! When did that happen? And you didn't even feel like to inform me about that? Amazing friend you are," I asked irritated.

"Relax buddy! I wanted to, but it was the circumstances which made me shut my mouth close, anyways I will tell you everything about it today. I have kept a party tonight to let the world know about my engagement. So, throw your anger out of the window and you better be present tonight in my party. It's a very important day of my life, so please" he said more like pleading.

"Ugh! Fine! I will be there message me your venue and all," I said and was just going to cut the call when he yelled from the other side "Listen! Listen! Listen!"

"What?," I snapped.

"Um Come with your wife. I want her to be here. Xavier I don't want to sound rude but you are a total jackass. She is not that bad as you have described" he said confidently.

I held the bridge of my nose and sighed.

Chapter 59

"Dominic I also need to tell you so much about what's going on in my life and it's all about Angela.I did a great mistake by judging her. She is far from what I described. She is totally innocent," I said regretting the things I did to her.

"I knew it!" He yelled which made me withdraw the phone away from my ear.

"See I told you. I knew it. Whatever you did with her that day was horrible. I knew it when I saw no reaction from her side whenever she was humiliated" he snapped making me feel worse.

"Yeah, I know it and trust me I have apologized to her for it," I sighed and sat on the bed.

"Then?" he asked eagerly.

"Then, everything seemed to be working great. She really is an amazing woman. I can't wait to tell everything about her to you," I said, my mood little lightened.

"Sure, just come in time to the party and do not try to do the fashionably late thing or whatever. Remember, if you are late then I'm going to kick your ass and beat the shit out of you" he said being serious.

"Whoa! No need to go all violent. I will be there on time," I said trying to tie my tie.

"We will see, See Yeah," he said and hung up.

I made my way towards Angel's room and knocked at her door.

"Come in,," she said and I went in to see her brushing her hair, looking at me through the mirror.

"There a friend's party tonight and he specially ordered me to bring you with me,," I said and pursued my lips shoving my hands in the pant pocket.

She turned to look at me and raised her eyebrows.

"So will you come?," I asked trying it to over all this in one breath.

She smiled and nodded her head and continued brushing her hairs.

"Okay then, be ready by seven. We will go there after I come back from my office," I said and she just gave me a small smile looking at me through the mirror.

I turned back to leave but stopped and turned around "It's Dominic by the way. It's his party. Remember him from Paris?," I said fidgeting with the hem of my Coat. I felt nervousness wash over me remembering that God Damn day.

Shit! What if she lashes out on me remembering the day?

She stopped brushing her hair and looked at me through the mirror then averted gaze towards the other side.

I thought she would get upset but I was proven wrong when she looked up and pursed her lips saying "Okay."

"Okay?" I asked surprised not seeing any reaction from her.

"Okay," she shrugged her shoulders and continued brushing her hair.

"Okay then," I whispered and went out of the room closing the door behind me. I exhaled my breath loudly as if I was holding my breath for eternity and sighed in relief.

The day passed by and I was really tired. I had to attend some meetings and had to visit a spot for buying a new land for my Company's new headquarter.

I loosened my tie and sighed.

Dominic's party!

I have to go to that stupid jerk's party and if I don't then he will make sure to make my life a living hell whenever we will meet each other.

I drove back to home wishing to have a good warm relaxing shower to relax my stiffened muscles. When I reached home I saw Lucy coming out of the kitchen.

"Where is Angel?," I asked her unbuttoning few buttons of my shirt.

"She is in her room. She already got ready for the evening and she is now attending a phone call from her family members. Should I call her down sir?," she asked me holding my business bag.

"No its okay. I will just go and get a shower. Let her talk. Just inform her that I'm home," I said and went to my room.

I took a good warm refreshing shower and got ready wearing a black Armani Suit and double cuff with cufflinks and my Rolex. I styled my hair into 5 O' Clock shadow look and grinned looking at the mirror, satisfied with my work. I checked the time to see we have only half an hour left to reach the party. I made my way downstairs to the living room hoping Angel to be present there.

Sure, She was already present there her back facing me and she was drinking water from a glass.

"Angel!," I called her buttoning up my left buttons.

She looked back placing the glass on the table to give me a heart attack. I could hear my heart beat not pumping but pounding and pounding against my rib cage to come out of my body.

There stood in a black dress with V cut in the front and a long slit displaying her long leg and white creamy skin.

I could see her cleavage and get happy to see the chain which I bought for her present there. Not in any sense, she looked slutty. She looked hot, sexy and bold and with her feminine curvaceous figure, she was ready to kill. She was wearing a black stiletto which made her look taller than she really is. Her hair was pinned up in a stylish side bun and some pieces of strands were falling on her face. With light makeup, she wore red dark lipstick on her luscious lips gaining attraction only to her lips.

Damn!

She doesn't have any Idea what she is doing to me.

"Shall we leave?," she asked making my eyes to linger more on her lips.

Sexy

"Xavier!," she shook me holding me from my arms.

"Yeah, yeah, let's go,," I snapped out of my dirty world and we both went out and got into our Limo.

The limo drive was totally in a silence for me it was a painful silence. It is not easy to hold yourself in control when a Sexy and Hot as red woman is sitting only some centimeters away from you. It is like meat kept near a hungry lion.

I knew today, it was going to be a really hard day saving her from hungry lustful Men. We reached there exactly on time and the chauffeur opened the door for us. The Paparazzi surrounded us clicking pictures of us and the bodyguards had to push them away from us. I wrapped my hands around Angel's waist and walked inside the venue.

I could see people have already arrived and some people were talking to each other while some couples were dancing on the dance floor.

"Finally! You are here" Dominic yelled against the loud music and came towards us.

"Yup I told you didn't I that I will come? I am a man of my words," I said doing a man hug with him.

"Whatever," he said rolling his eyes.

"Angela, Hi! How are you? I am really happy that you came" he chirped hugging Angel.

"I am fine. Thank you for inviting us" Angel replied smiling at him.

"You are looking really beautiful today," Dominic said making Angel Blush.

I tightened my arms around her waist and pulled her closer to me making Dominic raise his eyebrows "I see you two have grown lot closer."

I smirked and kissed Angel on her cheek making her gasp in shock to prove Dominic that whatever I said on the phone was true.

"Anyways you are right on time. I was just going to announce about my engagement now. Wait here" Dominic said and took the mike from the DJ and cleared his throat gaining everyone's attention on him. The music stopped and He signaled somebody to go near him.

Chapter 60

A brunette woman dressed in an olive green dress went towards him and he held her by her waist close to him.

"Everyone, as you all know we all here to celebrate my happiness of getting engaged to the woman whom I loved the most from three years has finally said yes to marry me. We are officially engaged now. Everyone, she is Lauren Smith" Dominic announced kissing the woman's cheek whose name was Lauren to make his point.

Everybody clapped and cheered for him and for his fiancé and the woman blushed and they both began to kiss gaining few sweet comments from the people.

He gave back the mike to the DJ and the music started playing again and people continued to do what they were doing previously.

"Congratulations" Angel wished them smiling at them.

"Thank you" both of them replied and smiled at her.

"Congrats man,," I said and shook Dominic's hand.

"Thanks, man" he replied and again kissed Lauren's cheek.

"Why don't we let both of them know each other while we chat a little. What do you say?" Dominic asked me gesturing Angel and Lauren.

I didn't want Angel to leave my side but I hesitantly nodded and left her with Lauren and went with Dominic.

"Whoa! Buddy come on tell me everything. I want to know everything" Dominic said excitedly rubbing his palms together.

"Relax! Man," I said and went towards the balcony. He followed me there and when we were away from the sounds of people and music, I told him everything from the beginning.

He was grinning like a wolf by the time I finished telling him everything.

"Whoa! That's a lot to take in Buddy. I knew it. I just knew it the way I saw her" he said and bumped my shoulder with his fist.

"Yes, I wish I could go back in time and solve all the horrible mistakes I did. That was really insane. I wasn't human," I sighed and rubbed my face with my palms.

"Relax dude. Whatever done is done. Now you should focus on your future" he said patting me on my shoulders.

"Yes, I guess so,," I said a weak smile forming on my face.

"So ?" he asked pursing his lips wiggling his eyebrows.

"What?," I snapped at him making him raise his hands in surrender smiling like a goof.

"You love her?" he asked already knowing the answer.

Jerk.

"No. What are you talking about?," I said crossing my arms on my chest.

"Oh, don't lie. I can see it in your eyes Xavi-Boo" he cooed pinching my cheek.

I slapped his hands away and glared at him but nevertheless smiled.

"I knew it. The great Xavier Knights have finally fallen in love. You are whipped brother!" he said crying dramatically.

"Oh, really? Am I whipped? Look who is talking," I gave him a sarcastic comment to which he just rolled his eyes.

"Whatever. So finally You are in love. Have you confessed it to her?" he asked raising his eyebrows.

"No, Not yet. I'm waiting for the right time," I said and sighed.

"Aww Relax Romeo. Are you scared that she will reject you?" Dominic asked parting my shoulders.

I didn't reply but shrugged my shoulders.

"I don't know what she will do after hearing my confession but there is one thing I know. Whether she says yes or no I'm never going to let her go. She was mine from the day I married her. She is mine. She will always be mine," I said confidence and promise lacing in my speech.

"You don't have any Idea How I felt when she was taken away from me by that rascal John. I felt like a piece of my heart is taken away from me. I found myself missing. My soul craved for her presence and the pain I felt was inevitable," I said remembering that awful day.

"From then only I knew it, I knew that I can never let her go. I have to fight for her and with her, if anybody or even herself will want to go away from me," I said and looked towards Dominic to see him grinning at me.

"You are completely smitten buddy," he said and whistled.

I smiled at him slapped his hands away from me when he tried to pinch my cheek.

"So? How does this happen?," I asked changing the topic and gesturing his ring.

He grinned and touched his ring with his fingers.

"Finally she said Yes to me. I loved her from my University days but never had this guts to ask her out.One day I gained courage and with most difficulty finally, I proposed her to be my girlfriend.Surprisingly, she said yes and after dating three years I proposed her again for marrying me and to my surprise she again accepted me."

"I'm really happy for you buddy,," I said making him smile.

"Lauren is the best thing that ever happened to me Man and yes like you I also can't live without her. I Love her."

"That I can see. Now come on let's go back in. I want to go back to Angel. I have already seen crazy stupid Men giving her lustful looks. Now hurry unless you want your soul mate and mine to find another one," I said making him scowl at me.

I walked back towards the crowd but stopped when I heard his next words.

"I'm really happy that finally you have got over with Claudia and chooses to move on" he whispered but I can get the vibe of happiness from his voice.

I turned back and pursed my lips shoving my hands into the pant pockets.

"Actually, I never loved her. She was my past and Angel is mine present. As I get it with Angel. Moreover, I was never happy with her. I'm lucky that I got Angel as my wife," I said truthfully and smirked when I saw his jaws wide open.

"What the fuck? You are a gone dude. I thought that you would lash out at me hearing Claudia's name from my mouth but here you are giving me your speech. Man! Angela has truly changed you. Changed you for good" he said happiness glistening in his eyes.

"Yup, Changed me for good,," I said and turned around to leave but the asshole has to open his mouth again.

"Oooo Xavi Boo calls Angela his Angel. Aww" he sang irritating me.

"Shut up asshole," I flipped the middle finger at him and he threw his head back laughing out loud like a maniac.

He is really a pain in the ass.

Idiot.

Chapter 61

Angela

"You look really beautiful in that dress," Lauren said smiling at me.

"Thank you," I replied smiling at her.

"I am really nervous about my engagement. It's all happening so suddenly that now I'm having second thoughts on it" Lauren said fidgeting with her fingers.

"Oh, don't worry. As much as I have known Dominic, he is a good guy. You will surely get over all this with the help of him. Talk to him about this," I said patting on her shoulder.

"You know, when I first saw you today I thought you wouldn't talk to me or you would have an attitude of yourself but you are totally different,," she said smiling.

"Why did you think I would be different?," I asked eagerly.

"Because you are really beautiful. And as much I have met beautiful people they are always full of themselves. Please don't mind me," she gave me an apologetic look.

"Oh, no no. I don't mind. It's usual," I said laughing a bit.

We were talking when we both heard a high pitched voice directed towards us.We looked towards the owner of the voice to see it's Kim and Stephanie.

Oh, no.I didn't know that I have to face them.

God help me.

"Oh, so you are also invited here?" Stephanie said cringing her face at me.

"Invited? Please, she must have forcefully come here with Xavier" Kim said glaring at me.

"What's going on?" Lauren asked us.

"This is going on," Stephanie said and poured her drink on my dress.Everybody present in the party gasped and the drink dripped down on my legs through the slit of the dress.

Lauren gasped and covered her mouth with her palm with widened eyes.

"You deserve it bitch.Why don't you just leave Xavier?" Stephanie yelled.

"Why will she? She is getting all the money and fame.It is her game after all.Bloody gold-digger!" Kim said her voice filled with venom.

My eyes began to water and I wanted to go away from there but stopped when I saw Xavier coming towards us.

"What's going on?" he asked confused seeing the crowd gathered around us.

"Xavi!" Stephanie shouted and went towards him. She wrapped her hands around his neck and looked back at me.

"Look we showed her, her real place" Stephanie chirped.

Dominic came and stood beside Lauren asking her what happened.

"What do you mean?" Xavier asked Stephanie.

Why do I always end up being humiliated in the public?

Tears began to blind me and this is the first time in my life I felt anger burning inside me. My anger was directed towards all of them.

I am a human. I do have self-respect and my dignity is precious to me. With teary eyes and my face contorted with anger, I looked towards Xavier who was looking at Stephanie hearing her rantings.

He unwrapped Stephanie's hands and moved her aside taking a step towards me.

I took a step back and held my hand out signaling him to stop right there and not making any farce in front of everyone.I had enough of it.I turned on my heels not hearing his inquisition.

Chapter 62

Walking out of the lobby I had to change my route out of the exit, escaping from the crowd. I left the banquet hall pacing really fast. I went right inside the revolving door and came out to the street with a sudden swirl.

I straightly got to the sidewalk shrugging myself from the world around me. Walking in the streets of Manhattan I walked slowly dodging people's stare to my state and made my way back to the Mansion.

I finally reached the mansion.

"Madam is everything alright ? "asked our security guard with concern in his tone after looking at my red swollen eyes.

"Everything is fine," I exclaimed to the guard showing him my narrow gaze and nodded my heads, making him to hurriedly open the giant gate and allowing me to dash into the house.

I knew that Xavier has already arrived back to the house by seeing the Limo parked outside of the house. I went to the door and surprisingly found it open. I turned the knob and went inside only to face an angry as a lion Xavier.

His face was contorted with anger and as well as concern.

"Where were you?" he asked as he approached me taking long strides.

I didn't answer him but made my way towards the stair. He followed me and stopped me by holding my arms and turning me towards him.

"Can't you hear? I'm asking you. Where were you?" He gritted his teeth and asked me by shaking me.

I jerked his hands away from me and glared at him.

"It's none of your business,," I said and was just about to turn when he pushed me to the wall caging me by keeping both of his hands on either side of me on the wall.

"It's none of my business? It is my God damn business. Do you understand? You are my wif-," I cut him off by pushing him by his chest shouting at him.

"Don't you dare wife me. Now you are giving the title of your wife to me? Why? Just why? What did you let them insult me before every one?

"I am so god damn tired of getting humiliated every single time now. Fine, I agree… I did marry you for money but I thought your father had your consent to marry a stranger like me. If I known you were being forced then I would have gone some other methods to arrange money for my father. Keep this in your mind, marrying someone off for money was the last thing I would have ever done."

"But nobody seems to care about it. I am just leveled as a gold digger before everyone and I'm tired. I'm tired of people slashing me, humiliating me every single time now," wiping the tears away from my face angrily I glared at the floor.

His hands reached forward to touch me but I snapped at him in an angry voice "Don't touch me," I said and ran on the stairs towards my room. Tears were streaming down my face and I wiped it angrily using my back hand.

"Angela. Listen to me!" I heard him running after me.

"Leave me alone!"

"Angela!"

Suddenly a hand turned me around and I was thrown on somebody's shoulder by my waist.

"Xavier! What are you doing? Put me down," I yelled.

He took long strides and from the direction, I knew he was going towards his room.

"Put me down. Let me go," I yelled at him hitting his back using my fist. My efforts were useless and he became to take long strides. I began to feel little dizzy because of my position and swung my legs.

He opened the door of his room and went in taking me with him and closed the door with a loud thud using his foot.

He threw me on something soft and I began to overcome my dizziness. I pushed away the loose hair away from my face and glared at him. I looked at the soft thing to see that I'm thrown on his bed. Slowly but intimidatingly he got rid of his suit and then his shirt leaving him only in his pants. My eyes trailed on his six packs and my heart rate began to increase.

"What are you d-doing?" He stood at the foot of the bed, watching my every move like a hawk. I watched as his eyes trailed towards my bottom and towards my exposed legs because of the dress which raised up and was out of its place leaving my legs all bare. I quickly covered my legs using my dress and shifted from my position to sit but he got hold of my leg and pulled me towards him making me squeal.

I began to struggle wanting to get away from his hold when he left my leg, I thought to take this as my queue to leave but a gasp came out of my mouth when he pounced on me caging me from my either side using his hands. He placed himself in between my legs and held my torso.

"What are you doing? Let me g-" My words were thrown out of the window when he held my face and kissed me rather fiercely choking my breath out of my lungs. I tried to push him but he held both of my hands and pinned them on the either side of my head and kissed me even more aggressively. All my attempts to free myself were effortless, so I didn't kiss him back.

But I wanted to!

He bit my lower lip and sucked on it asking me to kiss him back. When I didn't he bit down on my lips painfully making me gasp. He didn't enter his tongue inside my mouth to which I'm really grateful for then I somehow found myself kissing him back against my own brain who was continuously telling me to stop it.

Chapter 63

"What is it?" I asked as I looked at her still laying on my bed with her eyes widened up.

"What?" she muttered and shook her head before looking here and there and then back at me.

"Wait! You are still there? I thought you are he-" she trailed up and sat back on the bed looking even more confused. Her eyes skimmed through my body and I looked down cautiously thinking if my shirt was ruined or something that made her look at it so awkwardly.

Was she thinking of something?

Rolling my sleeves up my shirt I looked at her with a strange emotion that I felt after a long time. Feeling of longitivity and possessiveness. It was the first ever time she expressed her feelings to me and I knew it that she was hurt, emotionally. But I couldn't blame it on her. No wonder, this all began just because of my foolishness of assuming things. If only I had stopped those two humiliating her back in the Paris then they wouldn't have gotten so far and I felt sorry for it.

"Look I'm sorry for carrying you up hear but you left me no choice. You were depressed and you wouldn't listen to me," I said as I sat next to her on the bed.

"So nothing happened?" she asked still looking confused.

"What? What are you talking about?" I asked as I stared at her face but then my eyes fell on her legs.

No. Not the time. Control yourself Xavier!

"Right!" I cleared my throat composing myself but all of a sudden the room grew hot and I got rid of the first two button of my shirt feeling hot.

"What! What are you doing?" she screamed looking at me pointing an accused finger my way.

"What am I doing?" I asked in confusion but then it hit me. Realizing what she was actually thinking a chuckle escaped my mouth as I grin at her.

"What are you thinking off Angela?" I teased as I leaned towards her. The more I lean the more away she went.

"N-Nothing!" she squeaked out before composing herself as she turned around and shifted on the bed ready to leave.

"Wait!" I held her arm and stopped her from leaving.

"Sleep here," I asked as I pulled her suddenly towards me and pinned her on the bed.

"No, I am fine in my room," she laughed nervously as she tried to push me off her.

"But I am not. I feel scared when I sleep lonely and today you even lashed out on me. I don't really think I can sleep the whole night. I will keep on thinking about your well-being and hence I will end up waking up late in the morning. Then I would be late for my office, then for my meeting and then for my-"

"Stop!" she clasped her hand over my mouth to stop m from speaking.

"So?" I removed her hand from my mouth "Will you accompany me today?" wiggling my eyebrows at her I tried as much as I could make her feel comfortable around me and forget the events that happened today that made her so upset.

Although she didn't answer, still she managed to nod and I leaned forward planting a kiss on her cheeks feeling happy.

As I wrapped my arms around her and slept next to her, I watched as she fell asleep but it was when I could let myself let loose.

Possessiveness and anger surfaced though my body as I recalled how upset she looked back in the stairs. Her heart was broken and she felt humiliated all because of those two. As I slept next to her, I made up a promise to myself for let the one who hurt her suffer.

Chapter 64

I woke up to something soft and cozy. Immediately a smile formed on my lips remembering what it might be. I looked up to see her still sleeping soundly. Her one hand was placed around my neck lazily and the other was resting on the pillow. My legs were still tangled with her.

Slowly I untangled myself from her and crawled up to her face level and slept next to her.I pushed some hair strands away from her face and looked at the alarm clock to see it's already four in the morning.She changed her position and snuggled closer to me making me smile more.I held her and just slept there staring at her.

I promised her that I would sort all this out today and I have to do it.I slowly got up from the bed and covered her using the duvet and went inside the bathroom.

I did my morning usual taking a Good shower and brushed my teeth.Wrapping a towel around my waist, I walked out of the bathroom and walked into my walk in closet. I wore my black business suit and shoes and styled my hair and wore my watch.

It was already five in the morning.I went back to was Angel was still sleeping and kissed her forehead softly.I walked out of the room and closed the door behind me.

First of all, I have to know what happened yesterday.But first I have to make sure that she doesn't leave this Mansion.I called the Guards and strictly ordered them, not to allow Angel leave the House.

Then, I went to my study room and called Dominic.He picked up only in two rings groaning.

"WHAT? Do you even know what's the time? Ugh Let me sleep" he groaned his voice husky.

"Shut up and get your ass up and come to my house.I want to know what happened yesterday," I said in a cold tone.

"Ugh Fine but don't you use your business cold tone on me.Asshole" he muttered and hung up.

Useless jerk.

After waiting for only twenty minutes Dominic reached my house and entered my study room with a scoffing face.

"What is it?" he askedsitting on the chair.

"What exactly happened yesterday?," I asked and he sighed.

He leaned forward and rested his hands on the table.

"As for Lauren told me, that two slu- uh I mean Stephanie and Kim came there and started to insult her in front of everyone.Stephanie even poured her drink on Angela's dress and humiliated her calling her names" he said and leaned back on his chair crossing his arms on his chest.

I sighed and got up from my chair and went towards the window.

"They both need to know their places.They have crossed their limits now," I said deadly and stared out of the window.

"You know what? You should have shown them their places back in Paris.After Angela went away you confronted them for their behavior and have them a warning but according to me if you would have done that in front of Angela then this all should never have happened.I doubt that you even have let Angela know about this.Am I right?" he askedwith a determined look.

I didn't reply anything but I guess he got his answer because he sighed shaking his head and got up from his seat and came to stand next to me.

"Dude, I don't understand why do you always show yourself as the bad one? If you really love her then let see the real you Man" he said and kept his hand on my shoulder turning me around to face him.

"You don't need to be the bad guy.Be it when you want to keep somebody safe or protected.But don't be the Man who you are not.Just keep this in mind, You are her husband and she is your wife and let me tell you one thing misunderstandings is the first step to hatred so don't let it ruin your way to Love Man.Give her a chance.Give yourself a chance.Give your relationship a chance.Please" he said with a concerned face.

I pursed my lips and took in his words.Deep down I knew that he was right.

I have to clear every misunderstanding if I to want her to get a glimpse of my Love.

"Do you understand?" he askedagain.

"Hmm," I hummed back.

He sighed and went back and sat on his seat."So now what's the planning?" he askedraising an eyebrow.

I grinned devilishly and he raised his eyebrows more.

"Woah! What's going on your mind dude? I know that from of yours.It's definitely big" he askedwiggling his eyebrows.

"Oh, you don't have any Idea what I'm going to do," I said and picked up the phone and talked with the person for some minutes and hung up.

Dominic raised his eyebrows and intertwined his fingers and pursed his lips.

"We need to do some work. Now get your ass up and follow me," I said and walked out of the room with a devious plan in my mind.

Dominic shook his head but didn't uttered anything and followed me.

Stephanie and Kim, you are to regret insulting my woman.

Chapter 65

Angela

I woke up to direct Sun rays falling on my face through the curtains and I groaned turning over the other side.

Slowly I say on the bed and leaned against the headboard. I rubbed my face using my hands and a yawn escaped my mouth and I stretched and twisted my body and looked at the alarm clock.

Oh, God, it's already 9 AM.

I hurriedly got up from the bed and looked around. It wasn't the room where I lived. Memories of last night invaded my mind and I slapped my forehead remembering everything. I quickly made my way out of the room and went towards my room.

I went into the bathroom and looked at the mirror gasping at the sight. My hair was a mess and my dress was wrinkled. I got out of my dress and went to the shower. I washed my hair using the shampoo and applied conditioner. I washed my body and scrubbed it using a loofah and when I was done I turned off the shower and wore the bathrobe.

I wiped the mirror using my hand and brushed my teeth. I got out of the bathroom and chose to wear a simple gray blouse and loose white pants. I dried my hair and tied into a loose ponytail and applied some moisturizer on my hands.

I looked at the time to see it's already nine. I sat on the sofa next to the window and closed my eyes. I think I should just leave. But I don't know why I feel terrible for yelling at Xavier.

I don't understand why my heart doesn't want to agree on the fact that Xavier did it all intentionally. When I was yelling at him I saw his eyes flickered hurt and confusion.

I don't understand what to do.

I sat there for god knows how many minutes or hours but I decided to watch TV in my room.

I got up from the sofa and sat on the bed switching on the LED.I went on switching channels not finding anything interesting but when I was about to switch off the TV, the news channel displayed on the screen and I stopped myself from switching off when I saw the news.

Stephanie and Kim.

The reporters read *The two famous model of France has been arrested by the cops this morning for being involved in sex racquet and even trafficking.*

According to reports, the information was given anonymously who informed the cops with proves.

The alleged 23 years old model Stephanie said that "The news is false and she is being framed" whereas the 24 years old model Kim agreed on the news and chosen to surrender.

Both of them have been arrested from their house in the morning.

It is really a shame to know that this famous model chose to pimp and blackmail other innocent girls and baited them into procuring prostitution.

My mind went blank and I continued to stare at the TV with widened eyes. How is this possible?

Oh, my God!

I quickly switched off the TV and ran downstairs in search of Xavier. As soon as I reached the living room I saw him sitting on the sofa with his one leg above his knee and with ease, he watched the TV more like the news which I just saw.

There was a small smirk on his lips and I began to think of he was the one who did all this anonymously.

"I didn't have any idea what they two were doing there yesterday in the party and if you are thinking that I said them to do whatever they did to you yesterday then you are wrong," he said without even looking at me.

How did he know I was standing there watching him?

"I can always feel you," he said answering my unasked question, making my eyes even wider.

"If you are thinking this punishment is too much for them then you are again wrong. They deserved it. They deserved it for ruining innocent live. They deserved it for humiliating you" he said and looked at me with cold eyes.

I shuddered to see his icy gaze and crossed my arms ashamed. Feeling embarrassed and guilty for accusing him of such a big thing. I should have considered before yelling.

"Xavi-," I began but he cut me off saying "I will be late today. Now if you excuse me I have to go back to my office" he said and took his jacket suit from the sofa and went past me.

I wanted to cry but I wanted to say him a sorry.

God, why am I like this?

I should have thought before acting.

The whole day I would think of the ways to ask him for forgiveness but found none. I even surfed through the Internet for How to say sorry to your husband. None of the answers were satisfying

but one sent a shiver through my veins when I read it *lure your husband to bed. The best way to a sorry is making love to him.*

Oh, no.

This is not the way. Finally, I found a way. I thought of cooking him his favorite foods. I liked the idea and began to prepare the food. When I checked the time it was already eight p. m. and I knew he would be back home soon.

Although he did inform me that he would be late still I arranged the table and waited for him reciting the lines again and again in my mind to saying sorry.

I looked at the clock to see it's already ten p.m. My hope began to fade and I found myself more ashamed and embarrassed for jumping on a conclusion so soon without even knowing of trying to know about the matter.

I was sleepy and was really tired. So Lazily I walked into my room and got on my bed. Lying in the bed I stated at the ceiling for some more minutes when I started to doze off. I found myself in deep slumber and sighed internally for not even getting an opportunity to say sorry to him.

I woke up when I felt something wet and soft on my neck. I opened my eyes and gasped out of shock when I found a man hovering over me and kissing my neck. It was dark and I couldn't see his face but the way my body reacted to his kisses I knew who it was.

He began to kiss my neck then slowly reached up to my jaws. My heart beat was quick and I didn't stop him. Soon he stopped and got up from me and then putting his hands under my knees and my back he scooted me up.

"X-Xavier put me down. What are you doing?," I asked wrapping my arms around his neck like my whole life depended on it.

He walked out of my room with me still in his arms and walked towards his room.

"Didn't I told you yesterday that you will be sleeping with me in my room? Then why were you sleeping in that room huh?" his body was tensed and his eyes were still cold.

He reached his room and laid me on his bed. He climbed up after stripping to his boxers and covered both of us using the duvet. Then he wrapped his arms around me and slept next to me closing his eyes.

"Xavi-," I began but he again cut me off "The food was delicious," he said not even opening his eyes.

I felt little happy that he ate what I made but still felt the guilt for not able to apologize for my mistakes.

A lone tear rolled down my cheek and I slept next to him biting on my lips.

The first thing I will do tomorrow is to apologize him for my mistakes. I am going to repent it at any cost. I knew he was tired so I didn't try to make any more conversation and let him rest.

Tomorrow, I promise.

I'm sorry.

Chapter 66

I stretched my hand towards my side and when I found nothing I opened my eyes and looked around. Xavier was missing from my side but his side of the bed was already made and I looked at the clock to see it's already six in the morning. I quickly got up from the bed and made it, folding the duvet neatly I kept it aside.

Walking into the bathroom I did my business by taking a quick shower and I brushed my teeth and hurriedly I wore my dress and ran downstairs. Lucy was already up preparing breakfast.

"Good Morning Lucy," I greeted smiling at her, taking the apple I began to dice it.

"Good Morning sweetie," she greeted smiling and continued making omelets.

"Where is Xavier?," I asked and looked towards the living room.

"He went for jogging. I think he is on his way back home," she said and took the bread to toast it.

"Okay, Um Lucy I want your help," I said biting down on my lips.

"Help? Okay, what is it?," she asked when we heard the front door open.I looked towards the living room and saw Xavier walking inside the house striding towards his room.

This is the chance.

Go and apologize.

Quick!

Leaving whatever I was doing, I ran after him. I was right behind him but I didn't make it on time when he closed the door of the bedroom shut.

Oh, no!

I sighed and stomped my feet pouting. Pacing around the corridor I waited for him to get out of the room.

Right after thirty minutes, he came out of his room wearing his business suit and struggling to make his tie.

Golden opportunity!

I made my way towards him when he raised his head and called "Lucy, help me with my tie. "

I groaned in frustration when Lucy walked up to him and did his tie. After she was done, she went down and again I began to or more like tried to fish for opportunities to be near him but it all failed as he turned on his heels and went back to his room closing the door shut behind him.

Great!

Why don't you go and jump into the drain?

I sighed and thought maybe it's of no use to wait for him here.

Dining hall.

Yes! He will surely come to the dining hall for breakfast.There I could talk to him.

Chapter 67

I quickly went downstairs and arranged the plates.I went back to the kitchen to find Lucy already doing her work. Blending the pineapple, I poured the juice into the glass and brought it to the dining hall when I heard the sound of door opening and closing.

With furrowed eyebrows I went to the door and opened just in time to see Xavier getting inside the car and before I could call him, he drove away.

I groaned in frustration and pacefalmed myself.

"What are you doing dear?" Lucy asked from behind me.

I turned around to face her and asked about Xavier.

"Oh, he didn't tell you? Today he has a very important meeting so he skipped his breakfast which he will do in his office.Now come inside.Don't stand their for too long," she said and went inside.

I looked up and sighed in frustration.Why God? What did I do to get such treatment? Why are you doing this to me?

I went in and sat on the sofa switching on the TV.I kept on switching channels not finding anything interesting.Soon I began to doze off and I decided to take a nap on the sofa.

A screeching sound made me to jolt up from my sleep.I rubbed my eyes and went upstairs to see Lucy dragging a very heavy suitcase.

"God! Lucy what are you doing?," I asked in confusion and went to help her.

"Oh, it's nothing sweetheart I'm just transferring your things to Xavier's room.She shrugged her shoulders and continued to drag the heavy suitcase.

"What? But why?," I asked shocked.

"Oh, dear!," she stopped and held her waist and pushed herself back."Xavier ordered me to shift your things to his room today itself.He strictly ordered to shift all of your things to his room," she said and began to drag the suitcase inside his room and inside his walk in closet.

I sighed and went to help her.After placing everything and shifting everything to his room an Idea formed in my mind.I hurriedly went to the kitchen and began to make food.

I Decided to make lunch for Xavier and pay him a visit to his office and may be there I could apologize.

After finishing my work,I packed the lunchbox and went to Lucy for her help.When I asked her about Xavier's office location,first of all she gave me a confused look but helped me anyways giving me his office Address.

I went inside the walk in closet and got ready wearing a pink tunic dress with black belt and a striped grey scarf.I wore an overcoat and slipped on my sandals.Leaving my hair down I applied some lip gloss and ran out of the room and took the Lunchbox with me.

I thought to take the taxi.When I reached near the gates,I was totally shocked to see the two bulky guards closing the door and standing before me not allowing me to pass.

"What are you doing?," I asked shocked with their behavior.

"Sorry ma'am,we can't let you pass.We are just following orders.Sir told us not to allow you to leave the house" one of the bulky guard said giving me an apologetic look.

"Xavier told you not to let me pass? But why?," I asked them even more shocked.

"We don't have any Idea ma'am" one of them spoke.

"Okay! Fine," I said and turned on my heels and walked back towards the house.I looked back at them to see them both going back to their places.

"Not this way,than that way," I thought to myself seeing a ladder nearby the Mansion boundary wall.

I quickly went near the ladder and shifted it against the boundary wall.I took my purse and Lunchbox and climbed up when I heard the guards voices.

Both of them saw me and were shouting on me to stop climbing.But I was determined and in no way I was going to stop.I climbed up using the ladder and reached the boundary wall.

I looked at the height in the other side and looked back at the guards to see them nearing me.

It's now or never.

I looked last time at the height and gaining some courage I jumped only to land on my back.I groaned lying there for some seconds but eventually got up.

"Woah! I did it.That was quiet a jump," I gave a victorious smile and took my purse and box and made my way.

Reaching the Address that Lucy gave me, I payed the Taxi driver and looked at the building.A giant building which screamed power and luxury.

Knights Co-operation.

I went inside the building and saw people running here and there busy doing there work.I went towards the receptionist and saw a Blonde girl talking in the phone.I saw her badge to see her name Isabella.She ended her conversation and looked at me.

I don't think she liked me because she raised her eyebrow and gave me an arrogant look asking me what do you want.

I gave a smile and asked about Xavier's floor.She cringed her face and rolled her eyes and went back to do her work.

"Hello? Excuse me? I think I asked you about Xavier's floor," I asked her shocked by her behavior.

She looked up and gave me an irritated look.

"Why? What will you do there and who do you think you are calling Sir by his name huh?," she askedrudely.

"Angela Knights.His wife," I said making her eyes widen.

"Uh um ma'am.I didn't know.Uh office is in 48 floor," she stammered and looked at me nervously.

"Thank you," I said annoyed with her behavior and shook my head which made her to bent her head down,ashamed.

I took the elevator and punched his floor button.The elevator door opened with a ping and I came out to see people working and all were busy.But what mostly gained my attention was there expressions.All of their expressions were scared, feared.

Whom are they fearing?

I went towards a receptionist who was a middle ages woman and smiled at her.

Fear evident on her face still she managed to smile and asked me what can she do for me.

"Um I am here to meet Mr.Knights," I said and her already scared face turned more fearful.

"D-Do you have an appointment?," she askedgulping.

Why is she so scared?

"No?," I answered shaking my head negatively.

"Mam I'm afraid you can even meet him today.He has a very busy schedule and I don't think you should go near him now," she said giving me a small smile.

"Why?," I asked.I wanted to know why was she stopping me to go near him.

"It's not my place to say this but I think I should inform you that he is in really bad mood today and is very angry," she said and now this was my time to gulp.

"May I know your name ma'am," she asked .May be I could give you an appointment for later.

"Hmm sure.It's Angela Knights," I said and she dropped her pen looking at me with wide eyes.When I said that everybody present there stopped doing there work and looked at me with wide eyes.

"Uh I am so sorry, I didn't know.Mrs.Knights uh welcome to Knights Co-operation.I will just let you meet him.," she said and escorted me towards a room.I followed her there but I could feel everybody's gaze on my back.

She stopped in front of a door and gulped nervously looking at me.

"What's going on? Why is everyone seemed so scared?," I asked her stopping her from knocking on the door.

"Ma-Mam actually there was a very important meeting today and it didn't go very well.The second half of the meeting will be after lunch.Mr.Knights is very angry on the employees for not doing their work properly.He even warned us that he is going to fire all if we don't do our work done by today itself," she said fidgeting with her fingers.

I nodded and looked back at the employees.They were still looking at me with a strange emotion.May be hope.

I asked the woman whose name I came to know was Anna to leave.I wanted to go alone.I knocked on the door and their was a quick "Come in" voice.

I turned on the knob and opened the door to see two men with their back facing me standing before a large desk and the person who was behind the desk was yelling at them.

I guess the person is Xavier because I couldn't see his face because of the two men blocking me. Suddenly the man whom I guessed is Xavier threw a pile of papers on them which made them to sidestep.

The papers were flying and falling on the ground in slow motion and it was when the three of them noticed me standing there beside the door.

Xavier watched me with an emotion which I think was shock, relieved and confusion.

While the other two watched me in confusion.

"Get the Papers and leave, both of you" Xavier's voice boomed and made both of them to bent down and pick up the Papers hurriedly and they took long strides to get out of the room before sending a glance my way.

They closed the door behind them and when I turned back towards Xavier a loud gasp escaped my mouth in surprise when I saw Xavier already standing before me.His height hovering over me and dominating me.

In a flash his arms were wrapped around me and he pulled me to a bear hug.I squealed when he pushed me to the wall and put his head in the crook of my neck.

Chapter 68

His hands started to roam on my arms and then on my waist and he tightened his grips their pulling me to his check hugging me.

I marked his body relaxing and his anger subsiding.Hesitantly biting my lips I wrapped my arms around his back and hugged him back.For a moment his body tensed and I regretted the decision and was about to remove my arms but stopped when he began to nuzzle his nose in my neck.

After some minutes he relaxed and pulled away from me placing his hands on my cheeks staring into my eyes.His look was intense and there were some emotions flickering in his eyes which I failed to guess.

"What are you doing here?" he askedhis anger long gone and stared softly at me.

"Uh um I thought that may be you could join me in lunch because you skipped your breakfast," I said and laughed nervously.

He withdrew his hands back leaving my skin hot and I instantly missed his warmth.

"You c-came here to join me in lunch?" he asked finding it a surprise.

"Of course. But I guess you are really busy. So I will just leave," I said and turned around to leave but he stopped me by wrapping his hands on my waist turning me back towards him.

"N-No wait. I'm not that busy that I can't join you for lunch" he said and escorted me towards a couch.I sat on it and he sat near me.

"You really came all this way to have lunch with me?" he asked still surprised.

Chapter 69

"Of course," I pursed my lips and laughed nervously. I took out the lunchbox and kept it on the table. He got up and went somewhere and came back with two plates in his hands. I smiled at him and opened the lunchbox. The aroma of the food invaded his room and I noticed him inhaling the scent with a smile on his face.

"Woah! It smells so delicious. Now I have began to feel how hungry I am" he said and rubbed his palms.

I smiled and served the food for both of us in the plates and got up.I unwrapped my scarf around my neck and kept it beside me. I began to unbutton my overcoat's button and began to strip to get rid of it.I was feeling incredibly hot. I could feel his burning gaze on my body and I looked at him to see his lustful gaze on a certain part of my body.

I cleared my throat which made him to look at my eyes and he smirked.

"Are you going to strip naked because I don't have any problem.I'm already enjoying the show?" He blurted out with a smirk and twinkle in his eyes.

I choked on the air and looked at him with my wide eyes.

I narrowed my gaze at him and threw the coat on the couch and sat back taking the food in my lap and started eating. He began to laugh and pinched my already red cheeks because of blushing "You are so cute" he cooed. I slapped his hands away from my face making him to laugh more and I gave him an annoyed expression.

Soon he stopped laughing and took his plate and began to eat.

"Mmm delicious" he moaned eating his food making me to blush deep red.

I was sure that I was going to look like a tomato if he doesn't stop making me blush with his every comment.

We ate our food in silence and I would glance at him for finding a way to apologize. I finished my food first from him and kept my plate down staring at him. He didn't finish yet so I got up and went towards the washroom and cleaned my mouth and hands and wiped the water using a tissue.

When I came back he was already done so he got up and went towards the washroom. I kept his and my plates aside and closed the lunch box. He came out in 5 minutes and sat next to me.

I took a deep breath and blurted out in one go "I'm sorry" he raised his eyebrows in confusion and said "Excuse me?"

I bit down on my lips and took another deep breath before saying "Xavier I am really sorry."

He furrowed his eyebrows and asked "For what?"

"For yelling at you. For accusing at you something you didn't even do," I said and have him a apologetic look.

He began to get what I was talking about and his face gave an amused expression.

"Y-You came all this way, preparing lunch, only to apologize?" he asked and I nodded nervously.

We stared at each other for minute when he busted out laughing holding his stomach.

"Xavier!," I slapped his knee embarrassed.

"Oh, God. You want to apologize when I'm not even angry at you? Oh, God you are seriously very cute" he said and reached to pinch my cheeks but I slapped his hands away.

"Xavier I'm serious," I snapped making him to raise his hand in mock surrender.

"But I'm not at all angry upon you. I understand why you accused me. If I was in your place then I would've done the same. Actually it's all my fault after all. If I haven't been so Id-," I cut him by placing my finger on his lips.

"It wasn't your fault and I'm really Sorry. Please forgive me," I whispered apologetically.

He stared at me for some seconds then took my hand which was on his lips and held it softly. He took it to his lips and kissed it softly making me gasp.

"If that's what you want than I forgive you" he whispered back.

I exhaled out not knowing that I was holding it.

"I can never get angry upon you. You know why?" he asked whispering still holding my hand.

My heart beat started to raise and I shook my head slowly negatively not gaining trust on my voice. He smiled and stared right into my orbs "Because you are My Angel" he said and kissed my hand leaning his cheek on it.

My heart beat began to skyrocket and I gulped hearing the intensity in his voice. The way he stared at me, did something inside me.

I was spacing out when I didn't notice him leaning towards me. He took the hand which he was holding and kept it at the back of his neck. He began to lean more forward and I began to bent backwards. Soon my back hit the couch and he was in top of me just staring at me.

"I love when you leave your hair down" he whispered all of a sudden and took some strands of my hair within his finger.

"I love this color of your dress. It makes you look more beautiful" he whispered and started to lean towards my face. My heart beat was faster and I could hear it's sound in my ear. He kissed the end of my mouth softly and I took hold of his shirt clenching on it tightly.

He began to kiss softly on my face and then on my jaw and on my neck. He moved up and finally leaned down to capture my lips with his and kissed me passionately. I kissed him back quickly and pulled him by his shirt more close even possible. He started the kiss with sensuously and slowly. He kissed me gently and locked his lips to mine. He kissed me more passionately making my body hot and sending tingles down my body.

I liked this feeling though.

He nibbled on my lower lip and bit down on it softly tucking on it. Soon be began to pull away and kissed my neck. He stopped kissing me and stayed nuzzling his face in the crook of my neck.

He moved his head up and stared at my eyes while I stared at his. He smiled softly and I returned it with mine.

He got up from me and helped me to sit and sat next to me when his phone rang. He groaned and picked up his phone with annoyed expression.

"What?" He looked at me with a disbelief look.

I think I'm in trouble.

He hung up and shoved his phone back to his pocket.

"You jumped from the boundary wall?" he asked his voice laced with disbelief.

I gave him a sheepish smile to which he shook his head and muttered "Unbelievable."

Suddenly he took hold of leg and kept it on his knee checking for any injury.

"You jumped from a ten feet tall wall? What were you thinking? Are you insane? What if something happened to you? You behave like a child sometimes. I don't even understand you sometimes" he began to scold me still checking for injuries.

"Relax nothing happened to me. See I'm right before your eyes and why did you ordered the guards not to allow me from passing the gates. They weren't allowing me so I took the other way," I said smiling sheepishly waving my hands like it's not a big deal.

"An han I can see how much you are alright from this scratches" he said glaring at me,pointing at the scratches on my back thigh.

I laughed nervously and withdrew my legs away from his hold.

"You are scolding me? I came all the way to ask forgiveness and even took the risk to jump a ten feet tall wall and you are scolding me?," I tried to blackmail him emotionally.

He sighed and closed his eyes shaking his head."I forgot to inform the guards" he whispered .

"Why did you even ordered them not to let me pass?," I scoffed.

"Because Madam you warned me that you wanted to leave the house and that I couldn't allow to happen.You were so angry that you even declared that you don't even want to be my wife and what do you expect from me to do?" He questioned me raising his eyebrows.

"May be let me g-," I started but he cut me off

"NO I'm never letting you go. Even if you don't want to be my wife, I won't let you go. Even if you want to leave me I will never let you go. Do you understand?" he said anger back in his eyes.

"Xavier I was just joking. Relax!," I said and got up but he got hold of my hand and pulled me to him making me to sit on his lap. I gasped and tried to get up but he held my waist and made me to sit back.

He kept staring intensely at me and when I began to feel uncomfortable due to his gaze he finally spoke "Say that you will never leave me" he blurted out and I stared back at him with wide eyes.

He tightened his hold on my waist making me to snap back to reality "Say it" he demanded.

"I won't leave you," I said and stared into his eyes. He was still tensed and his body was stiff. I leaned into him and kept my head on his chest listening to his fast heartbeat.

Why is he so scared that I will leave him?

"I won't leave you," I whispered again and again and he became to relax. He began to rub his palms on my arms and I listened as his heart beat became to even.

I looked up to him to see him relaxed and I put my fingers on his hair combing it gently. He closed his eyes and leaned into my touch. I smiled and held his face with both of my palms. His eyes snapped open and I leaned down to place a kiss on his warm forehead.

He closed his eyes again and relaxed, his anger subsiding.

I got up from his lap and he gave me an adorable irritated look. I laughed and wore my coat and wrapped my scarf.

"Wait! Where are you going?" he asked confused and got up.

"Back home. You have a meeting in your second half did you forget?," I asked him teasingly.

He rubbed the back of his neck and said: "Of course not."

I rolled my eyes and have him a fake smile "Yeah sure you didn't," I mocked him getting a raised eyebrow from him.

I was about to take my purse when a thought crossed my mind. I look back at him and slowly walked towards him.

"Be gentle with your employees. They are also human," I whispered and strengthen his shirt which was now wrinkled "And all the best," I stood on my tip toe and softly kissed his cheek making him to wrap his arms around my waist to balance me and smiled.

I began to pull away but he pointed towards his other cheek asking for me to Kiss there. I laughed a bit but kissed him anyways my lips lingering on his cheek.

I began to pull away but he again pointed towards his forehead. "Xavier!," I scolded. He pouted but didn't let me go so I sighed and stood again on my tip toe to kiss his forehead when he changed his direction and kissed me on my lips.

"Xavier!," I snapped against his lips but he laughed and bite my lips making it to swell and me to gasp. I got his chest and pulled away.

He began to laugh and I took my purse and the lunch box and made my way towards the door flushed.

"Hey, my driver will drop you home" he shouted and I glared at him giving him a fake smile. I couldn't help it so I liked my tongue out on him and he began to laugh holding his stomach. I smiled and exited his room. His laughter booming from his office and everybody stared at me with wide eyes.

I simply smiled back at them and went towards the elevator to go back home.

Mission Sorry accomplished.

Chapter 70

Xavier

"Why?" she asked me with widening her eyes.

"What why? I don't like it!," I said crossing my arms over my chest.

"But why?," she pouted.

Currently, we are having a heated argument on a very important matter. Actually, Angel's cousin sister who is just living nearby wants Angel to babysit her two kids.

Today is the weekend and I wanted to spend some quality time with Angel but No my plans went out of the window when out of nowhere her cousin sister comes into the picture and asks her to babysit her two kids so that she could spend some time with her husband.

Great!

I don't want that to happen but Angel is so keen to keep the kids in our house for a day that she is arguing with me right now.

If she likes kids so much, then the only thing she needs to do is to simply ask me.

She was pouting on me for not agreeing.Finally, I gave in to her.

"Ugh! Fine," I said defeated and sighed.

"Really?," she askedme with disbelief.

"Yes really!," I said and crossed my arms over my chest.

"Yeahy!," she squealed and came running towards me.I felt excited and opened my arms for her, but she ran past me and picked up her phone dialing her cousin's number leaving me there, still with my arms open looking like an Idiot.

Huh and here I thought that I could spend some romantic time with her.All thanks to the kids.

I was sitting on the sofa watching the soccer highlights when the doorbell rang.My mood was grumpy and the annoyed expression on my face would scare away every single sane human being away from me.

Angel ran to get the door and with a groan, I had to follow her.She looked back at me and gestured with her hand asking me to smile.I gave her a fake smile and she furrowed her eyebrows.

She opened the door and we were greeted with two people and two kids.

"Angela" the woman chirped and hugged Angel.

"Kelly!" Angel smiled at the blonde may be 5′7" tall woman and hugged her back.

"Angela!" The man whom I guess is the husband of Kelly side hugged Angel.

"Ian!" Angel smiled at the blonde man whose height was may be 6′ and hugged him back.

"Suzy! Jake!" Angel hugged the two kids who hugged back to her.

"Kelly, Ian meet my husband Xavier Knights," Angel introduced me to them.I smiled at them and shooked both of their hands.They seemed friendly and warm.

"Hello nice to meet you,," I said.

"Xavier, she is my cousin Kelly Ivanoswki and her husband Ian Ivanoswki and their children Jake who is seven years old and Suzy who just turned five," she introduced them to me.

"Hello and it's nice to meet you too" they greeted back.

"Ivanoswki? Russian?," I asked and they both nodded smiling at each other.

"Angela Thank you so much for agreeing to watch over them while we are gone.We promise we will be back soon by dinner."Kelly said and ushered the kids towards us.

"Don't trouble your aunt and uncle okay.Be good kids while we are away.We promise we will be back soon okay" Kelly said and kissed both the kids head and went away with Ian to their car and drove away.

I looked at the two kids who were looking at me innocently.

Hmmm, I guess it won't be that hard to take care of them. So innocent.

"NO.Don't.Touch.It," I warned Jake.

Currently, he is holding a glass of water in his hand and is holding it above my laptop.He wanted to give it a bath.

Oh, god which laptop baths?

"NO . NO.Noooo," I yelled when he poured the water on my poor laptop.I pulled my hair in frustration and ran to it.I took the wet laptop and quickly wiped the dribbling water out of its screen.

"Oh, no.I think it won't start.Shit!," I glared at Jake who was smirking evilly at me and at the same time battling his eyelashes innocently at me.

I guess they are not so innocent as they look.

"You little how ca-" a loud scream cut me off and I recognized the voice is of Angel.Panicked I ran towards the direction of the voice.I knew Jake was following me running on his little feet.

I ran into my store room and as soon as I saw Angel, standing safely my heart beat calmed down a bit.

"What happened?," I asked her eagerly.

She didn't say anything but pointed her finger towards something.I looked towards the direction and I too screamed out of surprise.

There stood Suzy wearing a long oversized white dress and she has painted her face and body using my painting accessories.I used to paint before but I stopped because of my busy schedule so I kept all my canvas and painting stuffs in this store room and I guess Suzy used all my paints to paint herself.

She looked like that red ghost from the movie Insidious but a little version of it.I huffed and crossed my arms on my chest and narrowed my gaze at her and then at Angel.

"Now What?," I asked her.

She gave me an amused look and went to Suzy and scooted her up in her arms.

"Now we need to give a good bubble bath to both of them,," she cooed at Suzy making her giggle.

"Yeah! Bubble Bath Bath Bubble" sang Jake already taking off his shirt and running out of the room.

I shooked my head and sighed.

What have I got myself into?

"Aww so cute!" cooed Angel at Suzy making her giggle.

"Dhis Dhis Dhis Brooom Broom Beep Beep" Jake sang playing with the toy car I gave him while I shampooed his hair.

We made Jake and Suzy take a bath and now they are in the bath tub where Angel is giving helped Suzy getting rid of the paint from her hair, while I'm helping Jake.He just won't keep quiet so I gave him a toy car which I found back in the store room.While I'm washing his body and hair he is playing with the stupid car.

Suzy splashed the soapy water on me and Angel, giggling.I glared at her while Angel smiled.

"Ugh! there are causing so much trouble," I said irritated still washing Jake's body.

"Ow! What was that for," I said wincing when Angel elbowed me under my rib cage and might I say very badly.

"Don't be so rude.They can understand you," she said glaring at me.

"Whatever," I shrugged my shoulders at her while she shook her head at me muttering something under her breath.

"Finally!," I said as I took Jake out of the tub and wrapped a towel around his body.Angel too wrapped a towel around Suzy's body and kept her down on the floor with Jake.

"Now kids go back to the room while I wash your clothes," Angel said as she ushered them out of the bathroom and came back inside and soaked their dirty clothes in a bucket.

"They are a pain in the ass,," I said rubbing my now sore back.

"Xavier! You don't need to be so rude to them all the time. They are only kids," she said and shook her head at me and began to soak the clothes using her hands.

"Kids? Don't go on their sizes. They are little Devils," I said annoyed as I washed my hands and dried them using a towel.

"Xavier! All kids are like this. They are just uh- um very playful," she said and came towards me with the soaked clothes in her hand. She kept the clothes beside me on the sink and went towards the bath tub to clean it.I followed her there and turned her around holding her arm towards me.

"Did you not see what that five years old kid did to my painting stuff? They are doing this knowingly.I am telling you," I complained her while she continued smiling at me.

"Xavier you are exaggerating things. They are innocent little kids," she said and turned towards me when she slipped and she began to fall but I was quick and I held her but she was like pushed again and we both fell inside the tub in soapy water.

She on top of me.

I wiped the soapy water away from my eyes and we both heard giggling and laughing of both the kids. We turned out head towards the exit of the bathroom and there stood both of the devils laughing at us. They both pushed Angel for which she loosed her balance and fell on me making both of us inside the tub full of soapy water.

"Come here," I shouted at the kids which made them run away still laughing, out of the bathroom.

I will have to punish them. This is enough.

But all of my thoughts for getting revenge went out of the window when I noticed the soaked beauty on top of me. Water dribbling down her face and a cute frown on her face as she struggled to get up but failing miserably, as she fell back on me.

What more do I want?

Her pink top was completely soaked and my white shirt and pants were also totally drenched. My hair was wet and so was her. Her pink top became see through and I could see her inner lines through her shirt. She tried to get up and kept her hands on my chest and tried to get up again but I held her waist and pulled her back to me, making her gasp.

"Xavier!," she exclaimed.

"Sshh," I said putting a finger on her lips and pulling her up towards me.I trailed my Knuckles on her cheeks and jaws and she closed her eyes leaning into my touch.

"So Beautiful,," I thought to myself and pulled her closer.

Chapter 71

I moved forward and kissed her wet neck softly. I moved towards her more and wiped my face with her cheeks. I knew she was enjoying this too because she didn't oppose me. Her chain fell on my chest and I began to kiss her jaw biting softly roaming my hands on her back when we both jolted up breaking the contact when we heard a loud crash sound from our bedroom.

"Kids!" we both muttered at the same time.

Angel looked back at me and I stared back at her when I marked her lips twitching up and then we both erupted out laughing loudly. She held my shoulders and I held her arm and we both laughed so hard that it became difficult for us to get up. Finally, I helped her first to get out of the tub then I drained the water and got up from the tub all soaked.

Angel went to the other bathroom for cleaning herself while I took a shower in the same bathroom. After I was done I came out and went towards the living room to find Angel already there eating snacks with the Kids. The kids have changed into a new set of clothes which their parents provided us.

I sat on the sofa beside Angel and took the bowl of popcorn from the table. We decided to watch a Disney movie because of the kids and finally, we settled on Frozen.

Suzy was sitting on the other side of Angel while I was sitting beside Angel and Jake choose to sit before us on the self-recliner chair.

While the movie played I was more interested in watching Angel than the movie. I would scoot up close to her every chance I got. She was watching the movie with so much interest that she didn't notice my arm which I placed behind her shoulder on the sofa.

I leaned to her ear and whispered the line at the same time as the movie "Cause for the first time in forever I will be right here."Her eyes widened and she looked at me with an emotion in her eyes. She kept staring at me when her eyes started to become glassy.

I held her face in my hands and whispered to her with sincerity in my voice "I will always be there with you. Always."

She closed her eyes and leaned into my touch her lips twitching up into a smile. I scooted more close to her and she kept her head on my shoulder and I wrapped my arm around her shoulder.

When the movie finished, I got up and went towards Jake who was sleeping on the sofa. Suzy was up and she was doing something sitting near Angel. I thought to take Jake back to the room where

he could sleep peacefully and comfortably. As soon as I reached near him He opened his eyes and surprised me by shouting loudly "Boo" at me.

This boy. He was pretending to sleep. I was surprised and I glared at him while he got up from the sofa and threw the leftover Popcorn at me.

Doesn't he get tired ever?

Suzy started to laugh at me while Angel smiled still sitting on the sofa.

I ran following the little brat while he ran ahead of me circling the Coffee table. I followed him angrily while he laughed and taunted me nonstop.

Suddenly he turned to his right swiftly making me loose my balance and I fell right on Angel.

Ugh, what's with me falling today?

A loud gasp was heard and I moved my face up to see Angel looking at me with widened eyes.

What's with her widening her eyes? I only fell on her. What's the big deal?

I tried to get up and that's when I knew the reason of her widened eyes. Both of my palms were on her breast.

Oh, lord!

In an attempt of getting up, I applied more pressure on her breast which made her gasp. Her eyes were widened and her face became to grew red. I quickly got up from her and she stood up as quickly as I left her and turned on her heels excusing us that she was going back to the room. I looked at my Palms only one thought coming in my mind "So Soft."

"Stop running," I huffed seeing both the kids running in the hallway.

"Aunt called you," said Jake while I was working on my office paper in my study room.

"Where?," I asked getting up from my seat.

"There," he said and led me the way and I followed him.

"Where?," I asked again.

"There," he said pointing towards a closed old wardrobe in the store room.

"Are you kidding me? You made me walk all this way for this?," I said glaring at him and turned on my heel to walk away but stopped when he said: "We have locked her inside."

"What?," I shouted and panicked running towards the wardrobe. I opened it only to find no one.

"Xavier?," I heard the voice of Angel behind me and relief washed over me. I was just about to turn around when I stepped on something which had wheels and I slipped inside the wardrobe.

"Xavier!" Angel screamed and came running towards me worriedly.

"Ow!," I winced in pain when my left foot hit the inside of the wardrobe.

"Xavier are you alright?" Angel asked holding my arms.

"Yeah I jus- Hey hey. Open the door," I yelled when Angel was shoved inside with me and the door was closed. We heard the laughter of both the kids and we looked at each other.

Chapter 72

"Will you still say that they are Innocent little kids and they are not doing this knowingly?," I said crossing my arms around my chest or I tried to because of the little space, we were practically squeezing each other.

"They are kids after all," she replied laughing nervously.

I shook my head at her and banged the door angrily.

"Open this door right this Instant or the consequence will be very bad am telling you two," I yelled at the little devils who were laughing their ass off at us.

"Okay," Jake said and I thought that he was going to open the door but I was wrong when I heard the footsteps fading away.

"Hey! Where are you two going? Open this door," I yelled.

"Open the door, Jake. Please" Angel shouted banging the door.

"Please? Seriously," I questioned her irritated.

"Jake. Suzy open this door," I yelled banging the door hard.

"Later" he yelled and the footsteps faded away.

I huffed annoyed and sighed.

"Now What?," I asked Angel when I heard her sigh.

"I don't know. May be we should just call Lucy for help," she suggested and I nodded and took out the phone from my pant pocket.

Thank God My phone was in my pocket. I dialed Lucy's number but cursed when I saw that there was no network.

"What happened?" Angel asked me.

"No network,," I said and decided to leave a message which will go to her when there will be a network.

"She is in her room" Angel whispered.

"I know,," I said regretting giving her a day off. I thought I would spend some time with Angel today so I gave her a day off.

"I'm sorry" Angel blurted out all of a sudden. Her voice filled with regret.

"What? But why?," I asked trying to turn towards her.

"I was the one who argued to keep them home and now you are in this place and annoyed only because of me," she whispered apologetically.

I sighed and tried to reach my hands to her face because it was really dark inside the wardrobe and the only narrow shaft of light passing through the holes of the door made us see each other.

"It's okay. It's not your fault. Don't blame yourself," I said rubbing her face with my palms.

I don't know what happened to me so suddenly but I pulled her close to me real close to me so suddenly that she didn't even get the time to gasp.

"Tiring day," I whispered seductively in her ear.

"I thought to spend the day with you today, but you clearly had some other plans. So, don't you think that you should reward me with something for showing patience the whole day huh?," I said and began to kiss her collarbone.

"Xavier," she whispered softly.

I really don't know what got into me but I began to kiss her body fiercely making her to lean onto my kisses. I kissed her jaw biting and sucking on her skin, making her moan when I kissed her sweet spot. I began to trail kisses up to her face and she held onto my shirt tightly.

"Do you want me to do something?," I teased her kissing the end of her the mouth.

"Xavier!," she whispered irritated.

"I won't do it till you ask me to do. Tell me what do you want," I asked kissing her sweet spot making her moan.

"Ki-Kiss-s me," she whispered and it was enough for me to do as she asked me to do. I kissed her full on her lips and pulled her more close to me if it was even possible. I placed my hand in the back of her neck and pulled her more close kissing her senseless.

I tucked her bottom lip asking her for entrance. I wanted to taste her and wanted to know her more. Surprisingly she opened her mouth and gave me permission to enter her. I entered my tongue inside her mouth exploring every inch of her. I fought with her for dominance and finally won.

My other hand began to roam over her body. I placed my hand inside her top on her bare waist which was warm to my skin. She shivered to my touch and I smile against her lips liking it. Slowly I trailed my hands up and up to her body. I stopped for some seconds giving her the chance to push

me away if she wasn't ready but I surprised when she wrapped her arms around my neck standing on her tip toe.

I placed the hand which was on the back of her neck on her waist and balanced her.

Slowly I trailed up more and finally, I was able to touch the part of her body which I have been dreaming from a long ago and was dying to touch. Though only a thin piece of cloth was separating her skin and my hand from fully touching her still I was mesmerized to feel it.

So soft and so fleshy. It fitted perfectly on my palms and I gave it a squeeze gaining a loud moan from her. I squeezed it more and pushed her to the wall of the wardrobe making her moan more.

I wanted more so I couldn't hold myself anymore so I placed both of my palms on her boobs squeezing it and kneading it and holding it making her moan non-stop. Her moans were like some music to my ears turning me on and as if it urged me to keep on going.

But I knew she was new to all this and she would panic if I would rush things any further. On top of that, I didn't forget that she had to go through so much in her life. She was a victim of sexual assault and kidnapping and I tried my level best to bring back the confidence in her. Her moans filled my ears and I had to control myself from going any further.

With a last squeeze, I withdrew my hands back slowly and placed it on her waist. I placed my head on her forehead kissing softly on her nose.

"Someday, I will get you," I whispered to her while she panted.

Suddenly the door flew open and I had to squeeze my eyes shut because of the sudden rays of light.

"Oh, dear! Are you both alright?" Lucy asked us with a worried expression. But her worried expression soon turned into a slight smile when she Angel's face. Her face was red as a tomato and all flushed. She quickly got out of the wardrobe and walked swiftly out of our sight.

"Oh! Uh um as soon as I got the message I came here to help you" Lucy muttered flushed.

"Thank you, Lucy," I said and followed Angel towards our room.

As soon as I got inside the room I locked the door and ran after her and pushed her to the wall pinning her hands to the either side of the wall.

"Are you regretting what happened back there?," I asked looking straight into her eyes.

She shook her head negatively saying a quiet "No."

I smiled and shoved my face inside the crook of her neck. "Good because now it is going to happen every day and every night," I said and kissed her neck making her gasp.

I pulled away and held her hand pulling her with me "Now let's go down.Their parents will be arriving anytime soon to pick them up."

She nodded and followed me.

At least the kids did some good to me.

I am going to buy some chocolates for those wonderful kids.

"Oh, how much I just love kids," I smiled as I walked down the stairs.

Chapter 73

Angela Pov

"Hey! How are you?" Emily asked from the other end of the phone.

"Yeah, I am fine. Tell me, what about you?" I asked pressing the clothes.

"Yeah, I am fine too. I was thinking, let's meet up today. What do you think?" Em sounded excited.

"Today?," I asked keeping the iron on the side.

"Yes, today. We haven't met for a long time. So just catch up with each other today," she exclaimed.

"Okay. Sounds good to me. Just message me when and where okay," I said folding the shirts.

"Yeah! I got it. Okay bye!," she said and hung up the call.

I kept my phone on the bed and took the folded clothes to put it inside the closet.

I was arranging the pressed clothes inside the closet when I felt a hand wrapped around my waist.

Xavier.

Water dripped from his hands and he pulled me to his chest.He just came out of the shower and I could smell the fragrance of his soap from his body.

"Whom are you going to meet today hmm?" he whispered in my ears, tightening his hold on me.

"Emily. she asked me to meet her today," I said.My breath hitched when he pushed my braided hair to the other side of my shoulder and started to place kisses on my back softly.

"Come back home before evening.Okay? I want to take you somewhere" he said turning me around to face him. "Where?," I asked in confusion.

"That's for me to know and for you to find out," he said smirking.

Why do I feel as though he is planning something very big?

But I shrugged it off and gave him a small smile.He smiled and leaned down to kiss me and that's when I noticed that he was standing with a towel wrapped around his waist.

He noticed my gaze and looked down then back up at me giving me a crooked smile.

"What? You don't like the view?" he asked and I tried to move past him but he held my forearms and stopped me.

"If you want you can take this towel off from me, after all, I am all yours" he joked pulling me towards him while I pushed his chest wanting to get away from him.

A smile formed on my face and he laughed teasing me.I don't know when but his towel slipped off from his waist and suddenly it was in my hand.When the realization hit me what happened, closing my eyes I threw the towel at him and ran out of the closet screaming while his laughter filled the whole room.

Oh, God!

"Angie!" Em exclaimed excitedly hugging me.

"Em, I missed you,," I said hugging her back.

"I missed you too,," she said and dragged the chair in order to take her seat.

We decided to meet at a restaurant, where we would catch up with each other while eating our lunch.I chose to sit on the opposite chair and sat down on the chair all the while smiling at her.

"So what's going on?," she asked all of a sudden.

"Everything is going fine.What about you?," I asked her and raised my eyebrows when I marked her trying to stop her smile.

"What is it?," I asked again.

She looked at me nervously then smiled fidgeting with her fingers.

"Actually I wanted to tell you about something very important,," she said and a blush formed on her cheeks.

"What is it? Come on you can tell me," I encouraged her.

"It's uh ah, menu yeah menu let's order something first,," she said shoving the menu into my face.

I gave her a weird look but nevertheless went through the menu for ordering.We have our orders to the waiter who wrote it down on his notepad and placed two glasses of water for us and went away to get our orders.

"So, what is it?," I asked leaning towards her.

She took a deep breath and closed her eyes, when she opened her eyes she gave me a determined look.

"Iaminloveandwearegettingengaged,"she blurted out in one breath and huffed out air from her mouth as though a big burden drifted from her shoulders.

"What? What? What?," I said giving her a confused look.

She looked at me for some seconds then face palmed herself muttering, "Oh, God, this is so difficult.Why did you give me this task to do?" But I heard it.

"Em, come on tell me.Clearly,"

"It's now or never," she muttered and stared straight into my eyes.

"Angie! I am in love and we have decided to get engaged soon," she exclaimed.

I stared at her, registering her words in my mind when I jumped at her making her eyes wide, screaming "Oh, my God! Oh, my God! Congratulations!"

I was sure everyone present in the restaurant was looking at us.She laughed and hugged me back saying "Thank you."

I went back to my seat and leaned on my chair for some minutes. "Who? How? When?," I asked making her giggle.

"I never thought I would fall for him.He is great guy Angie.I never told you this but he was after me from my High school.I always rejected him.But when he was in a problem then only I realized how much I loved him.I couldn't see him like that.My heart shattered when I saw him in pain.I realized how much I loved him.I was a fool not realizing his love towards me," she said her eyes glistening with happy tears.

"Aww Em.I understand," I said taking hold of her hand and giving it a squeeze.

She smiled and took the glass of water and gulped it down.

"So, who is the lucky man?," I asked taking my glass of water and gulping down from my throat.

"It's um uh don't panic okay. It's your brother Lucas Carson," she blurted pot making me choke on my water.

"What?," I exclaimed shocked.

She bit down on her lips and looked at me nervously "It's your brother Lucas, Angie!," she said slowly.

I was shocked.I knew that something was between them but never have I thought that my big brother loved her and that also from her high school days.

Seriously?

"Oh, Angie! I can understand if you don't like me to enga-," she began but I cut her off "Shut up.Of course, I don't have any problem.You will be the best choice for my brother," I said making her smile.

"It's just that you never said anything about this to me and not did my big brother.And where is he? He should be the one telling me all this," I said irritated with the fact.

"Oh, believe me, Angie, I did tell him to inform you by himself but he was the one who pushed me into this,," she said crossing her hands on her chest.

"God! Where is he?," I asked.

"Right behind you,," she said with a frown on her forehead.

I raised an eyebrow and looked behind to see him behind our table giving me a sheepish look.He got up from his seat and came towards us while I glared him.

"Haha uh, hi Angie.How are you?" he said nervously.

"Oh, don't you have any idea how I am right now big brother?," I said enunciating each word slowly.

"Am I in trouble?" he askedrubbing his neck.

I looked at Em and then at him saying "Yes you are. "

It's already five in the evening and I am going back to the Mansion, my driver driving the car.Lunch went well.I came to know about Lucas's feelings about Emily. He even kissed her before my eyes.

They have decided to get engaged and they will officially declare it very soon.Right now I am really late.Xavier told me that he would take me somewhere today and for that I should get ready.

The thing is I don't know where he is taking me and I don't have any idea on what to wear.

As soon as I reached home, I dashed into the bathroom taking a good shower and came out wearing a bathrobe.I went inside the closet and stood there thinking what to wear.When nothing came into my mind, I decided to ask Xavier.

I took my phone and messaged him asking "Hey! I was thinking where are you taking me?"

I waited for some minutes and checked my inbox when my phone beeped.

"I already told you.It's for me to know and for you to find out."

"But what should I wear?" I asked and waited.

"Umm wear something short and fancy"

"Okay," I said and kept my phone aside and went back inside the closet.

I searched for something red.I wanted to wear red today.I got a red short up to my mid thigh dress with no sleeves.I wore it and brushed my hair leaving it down.I wore a pair of heart-shaped studs and a golden ring to match my outfit.I applied mascara and red lipstick with gloss and wore my black stiletto.

I took my purse and kept my phone in it and went downstairs to the living room.It was already seven in the evening and yet there was no sign of Xavier.Worriedly I took out my phone to call him but stopped when my doorbell rang.I went to get it and opened the door only to find our chauffeur standing on the porch with a smile on his face.

"Good evening ma'am," he greeted.

"Good evening George," I greeted back.

"Sir has sent me to take you to him," he said and escorted me towards the limo.

Chapter 74

I messaged Xavier about it and he replied back agreeing on it. We drove away from the Mansion and drove for thirty minutes when the limo came to a halt.

I came out of the limo and immediately a hand was placed on my eyes making me blind. From the fragrance and his hands I knew it was Xavier.

"Xavier! What are you doing?," I asked, a smile forming on my face.

"Ssh keep your eyes closed. It's a surprise for you. Do to trust me?" he asked and I nodded my head.

He took his hand away but warned me not to open my eyes. I felt a cloth being wrapped around my eyes and I knew I was being blindfolded.

"Now come on, Just walk with me okay," he said and I nodded.

We began to walk and I held his hand walking slowly with him.

"Almost there," he whispered.

We stopped and I felt him undying my blindfold.

"Ready?" he asked me.

"Yes," I whispered.

"Okay now open your eyes," he said and I did as he said only to gasp seeing the scenery. We were currently in a meadow where there was a table decorated with candles and there were lights everywhere.

The place looked beautiful and immediately I smiled looking at the decoration.

"Do you like it?" he whispered in my ears from my behind."Yes. I love it," I beamed.

I turned back towards him and asked him "Is there something special today? Why is this al-" he cut me off by turning me around and pushing me towards the table.

"We will go to that discussion but first let's enjoy" he sat dragging my chair for me.

"Thank you," I whispered.

He smiled and kissed my cheek and went to the other side sitting on his chair.

"Now" He clapped his hands when a man wearing a waiter outfit came towards us holding a tray with glasses and wine bottle.

The waiter kept the glasses in front of us and poured the wine into it serving it to us.

Xavier handed me the glass and we cheered clinging out glasses and took a sip of wine.

"Are you going to tell me?," I asked but he just smiled finishing his drink and came over to me giving me his hand to take.

Reluctantly I took his hand and he guided me to a plane space where some people were already standing holding musical instruments. I gave him a confused look when he signaled them and they began to play their cords.

He held me by my waist and pulled me towards him. I placed my hand on his shoulder and held his hand with my other hand when he began to move according to the music and I followed him rhythmically.

I began to laugh when he swirled me and we began to dance enjoying the moment. When we were tired we went back to the table and sat on it.

"Xavier! I don't know what's going on but I'm really enjoying it," I said smiled at him.

He smiled and said, "You look beautiful tonight."

I blushed and said a quiet "Thank you" smiling.

Once again he clapped his hands and the waiter came back with a trolley. Aroma of freshly cooked foods filled my nose and my mouth watered wanting to eat it.

The waiter placed the plates before us and removed the lead from the dishes. Variety of food was prepared and then only I knew how hungry I was. He served us our food and went away. We began to eat our food talking about random things in between and I even told him everything about Lucas and Emily.

He smiled and would listen attentively to whatever I said. By the time we finished our food my stomach was fully filled.

I leaned on the chair and stated at Xavier who seemed nervous and as if he was in a dilemma. He loosened his tie and took out his handkerchief wiping out the sweats which were forming on his forehead.

I was confused and most of all worried. I never saw him nervous or in dilemma. I wonder what is his problem. As soon as I opened my mouth to say something he stood up from his chair and came towards me.

I closed my mouth and stared at him thinking what he was doing. He took my hands and made me stand and looked straight into my eyes.

"Angel, You asked if there is any special occasion for such a setup today so your answer is Yes there is something very special today," he said and took a deep breath before continuing.

"It is the most important day of my life, where I am going to confess my feelings to you."

Confess?

Feelings?

"You might be thinking I am acting weirdly but let me tell you yes I am like this only because of you. You are the one for whom I am like this."

"I bu-" he cut me off by placing his finger on my lips.

"Ssh let me finish first. Before you came to my life, my life was a total mess. I was a Casanova a playboy who didn't respect any woman but now if there is any woman whom I respect the most then it's you. Yes, it's you" he said removing his finger holding my face in his palms.

"Though I was a complete ass to you, in the beginning, you have managed to build a house inside my dark heart in these nine months. It's already nine months to our wedding and I am yet to confess my feelings to you and today I am going to let it all out of my heart."

"You are my light saving me from the darkness. I don't know what good I did in my past that I got you as my wife. I am really thankful to the almighty for choosing you as my wife. You are my soul mate. My better half. You are my Angel" he said and leaned down to pack my lips.

"And I Love you," he said and captured my lips leaving me all shocked and surprised.

He loves me?

But when? How? Why?

But do I love him?

Oh, my lord!

***

It's been a week since Xavier confessed his feelings to me. I never knew that he would ever feel so strong towards me. It's shocking. Really shocking. I was dumbfounded when he confessed his feelings. When he kissed me I stayed rooted to my position. Not able to move, my brain wasn't functioning.

The same question went on and on in my mind. How can he love me? How and why?

I never thought of loving him or even having any romantic feelings for him.Yes, I feel great, overwhelmed when he kisses me. Protected and cared when he hugs me. But never in my life had I thought of loving him.

When we were married misunderstandings stood between us and we lost the opportunity to know each other better. I was forced to marry him because of my father's condition. But then when I married him, I compromised with my feelings and thought that I could actually spend my life with a stranger. But things had to go down between him and me.

He hated me and he thought I was after his money. He tortured me and made my life a hell and forced me into a position where I couldn't even return back home nor I could go anywhere else. My family was once again in a good position only because of Xavier's father. I couldn't end the marriage because I feared my father's condition would get worse if he gets to know how Xavier has been treating me and I would actually betray Mr. Brad Knight by ending the marriage because he had hopes on me.

So finally, I let it be and decided to go with the flow until Xavier realized the real reason of me for marrying him. He started to change. He started to treat me better. At a point, he even said that he respects me.

***

Chapter 75

He kissed me pulling me towards him while I stood there shocked and surprised.When I didn't kiss him back he started to pull away and held my face by his hands.

"I know this is very shocking for you.I confessed my feelings to you but I won't force you to give me my reply."

"If you don't love me, then it's okay because I can't make someone to love me right? I will give you time.Take as much you want because we have our whole life.But one thing I know, whatever is your reply I'm never letting you go.I just can't.

"I can live my whole life without you loving me back but not without you."

"I know that you still haven't developed feelings like mine for me but I will wait.I will wait till you fall for me and love me back like I do.I love you. "

With that, he pulled me to a senseless kiss.The kiss was like he sealed his promise in it. Passionate and loving.I couldn't help myself but kiss him back.

*** It's been a week since that day and like he said he never forced me to love him back. Every day he would hug me in the morning and Kiss me while I'm not paying attention.

I feel very guilty for not able to return his feelings. I don't understand why I am not able to love him back.Is it because I am afraid?

Am I afraid of his personality?

Am I afraid that he would play with my feelings?

Or is it because he probably was a playboy and he would use those lines to woo every woman.

No it can't be.I saw the sincerity in his eyes that day while he confessed his feelings.He won't play me.

I sighed and got ready wearing a ripped black jeans and grey blouse.I wanted to go out for a walk.I wore my sunglasses and took my handbag and came out of the house.

Xavier must be in his office working.I didn't leave him a message that I am leaving the house because I thought I would return back before evening and moreover I didn't want him to worry for me.So I walked out of the mansion, taking a left and walked along the pathways.

I watched as the cars and vehicles run past me on the road while I walked enjoying the time leisurely.Soon I walked past a park and then I reached a Cafe.I decided to have a good cold coffee so

I went inside the Cafe and ordered myself a cold coffee and some snacks and took my seat in the corner.

The cafe was crowded and I was really lucky that I got a seat to sit.

I took out my iPhone which Xavier gifted me two days ago and started to browse through the internet going through news updated to pass my time.

A clearing of throat grabbed my attention and I looked up to see a woman standing near the chair staring at me.She looked familiar like very familiar.I had this feeling that I have seen her somewhere but where I can't reminiscent.

I marked her appearance to see she was wearing a black top with blue faded jeans and she was holding a handbag just like mine.

I gave her a questioning look to which she said politely "Can I sit here?"

"Yeah, sure,," I said and went back to surfing through my internet when she again cleared her throat.

I looked towards her to see that she already took her place sitting before and she was staring at me.

"I think you might be not knowing me but I know you,," she said in a monotone making me raise an eyebrow.

"Really?," I asked and she nodded slowly.

"Yes.You are Angela Knights right?," she said and I nodded a smile instantly appeared on my lips.

"Xavier's wife," she whisperedand I frowned.

Who is she?

Does she know Xavier?

"Yes, I am his wife," I don't know why I said it but I had this sudden urge make it clear to her.

She pursed her lips and nodded.She kept quiet for some minutes lost in deep thoughts.I took the time to mark her features.

A brunette with plump lips, tan skin, average height and big eyes.She looked beautiful but something looked off.She seemed to be a mysterious woman, like hiding dark past or secrets.

She stared right into my eyes with her brown eyes and raised an eyebrow probably because of my staring.

I uttered a quiet "Sorry" and continued surfing.

"Don't you want to know how I know Xavier?," she askedmaking me to look at her.

I sighed and kept my phone aside nodding unsurely at her.

Yes, I do want to know who she is actually.

She closed her eyes and opened her eyes "I'm Claudia Thacther and I was Xavier's girlfriend and I was his fiancé," she said in one breath making me to choke on air.

"WHAT?," I said shocked.

She bit down on her bottom lips and sighed "Yes.I was his girlfriend and even his fiancé."

My eyes were wide and I wanted to know more "When?," I asked restlessly.

"Four years ago," she replied melancholy.

I kept quiet and waited for her to continue.

"Four years ago we were best friends.But I never knew that he loved me until he proposed me," she said probably thinking about the day.

I don't know why my chest started to hurt.

Xavier loved her?

He loved her before me?

Chapter 76

"I rejected him when he proposed me but soon regretted the decision when I came to know that never in my life I can find a perfect guy who would love me as Xavier did.So, the very next day I said yes to him making him happy and we both got engaged and started to share an apartment."

I kept quiet taking in the information she gave me wanting to know more and more.

"After that something happened and he got angry with me resulting him to call our engagement off," she said pursing her lips.

"When I went away from him then only I came to know how much I loved him."

"I cheated on him, in his own apartment bedroom, with his very best friend Daniel,," she said looking towards the window.

I felt disgusted towards her.How can she do that to him? Is this the reason which changed Xavier and made him a cold-hearted man?

I couldn't hear it anymore.I was disgusted by her and moreover, only one thought came to my mind Does Xavier still loves her? Did he confess me because he wanted to free himself from her always being in his mind?

Now, I do remember where I saw her.The day when I and Xavier went for shopping we both saw her near the parking lot with a kid.I remembered how Xavier's mood changed to anger and he was even furious on me.

He never forgot her.

Else he wouldn't have reacted seeing her.

I felt hurt.I don't even love Xavier then when am I feeling hurt?

Or do I love him and this is the reason why all of a sudden I feel angry with him?

No, it can't be.

Before she could say anything I stormed out of the cafe without canceling my order and walked straight back to the mansion and straight to my room or should I say Xavier's room.

I sat on the couch holding my forehead.I have begun to have a throbbing headache which really began to make me feel dizzy.As I clicked my tongue and drank the water from the glass the phone in my room rang and even though I didn't want to get up from the bed, I stood up and dragged my feet to the opposite wall for getting the landline phone.

"Hello?"

"Sweetie, I forgot to remind Xavier that the blue lunch box is for his clients because the food in it has peanuts in it and Xavier can't eat that because he is allergic to it" Lucy finished in one breath and I screamed a 'What'horrified after hearing that.

Xavier was indeed allergic to peanuts and the last time he ate a dish which had peanuts in it he almost fainted.His blood pressure was low and his skin looked pale.

"What? How can you forget such a thing, Lucy? Oh, my god!" I panicked, even more, when I saw the time.It was almost his lunch time.

What if he eats that food in that blue box?

"I couldn't tell him about it because I had kept the box on the table.One was a red one which was his lunch box and another one was for his clients which he told me to prepare specially for his clients.I cooked a special dish which contains peanuts but before I could inform him about it he had left with the boxes when I was in the laundry room picking up the clothes,," she said and I paced around the room terrified.

"Did you call him?," I asked "Yes, I did but his phone is switched off and I even called his Mr.Ron and his receptionist.Mr.Ron's phone is also switched off and the receptionist said they are in a meeting and to top of that Xavier has left his allergic meds in the home,," I heard her worried voice and decided that I would be taking his meds to his office.

"Okay don't worry I think he hasn't had his food yet else he would have already called us.Don't worry.Ask Marc to get the car ready.I'll be going to his office with his meds and I'll make sure he doesn't have that food,," I said hung up on her before running around the room searching for his meds which I found on his side of the drawer and I hurried down the stairs meeting a worried Lucy on my way.

"Don't worry I'll reach on time, "I yelled as I ran towards the door.

"Be careful!," I heard her and as I got inside the car Marc our new driver pulled the car towards the driveway and towards the direction of Xavier's office. All the while I prayed to God that he shouldn't eat the food and if he did his allergy shouldn't surface before I reach him with the meds. I was worried for him. I could even feel my heartbeat thudding in anxiety worrying for him.

As soon as the car took a halt, I jumped out of the car and ran towards the building's entrance. The guards looked at me and the receptionist whom I met a few days back also greeted me in my way as I waited patiently for the lift.

As fast as I could I ran out of the lift towards his office room which I remembered from the last time I came here but by the time I reached his door, I was huffing and panting badly. But then relief washed over me as I walked into his room and saw both of the boxes untouched. Smiling and taking a sigh of relief I turned around and walked to the other partition in hopes of finding him there but stopped when I saw another person with him.

His Ex-fiancé was standing there but not just standing but hugging Xavier who was also hugging her back.Her eyes were closed and she kept her head on Xavier's shoulder as Xavier patted her back.

At first, I thought probably she was forcibly hugging him but then Xavier looked far from being uncomfortable with her.It was the same feeling I felt when I saw that woman in the house who came in search of her chain.At first, when I saw her and Xavier coming out of the room, I had this uneasy and burning sensation in my heart which later subsided after I got to know that nothing happened between them and she was just looking for her lost chain.For today, the emotions that I felt was something different.

How could he hug the woman who betrayed and cheated on him?

Does he still love her?

He hasn't forgotten about her. Hasn't he?

When I first met her today itself I had this sudden dislike towards her. Not because she cheated Xavier but because she was his first love and even his fiance. What made him hug her?

I felt the sides of my eyes stinging and I turned around on my feet and walked out of the room not wanting to disturb them. On my way, I met Ron and handed him the meds letting him know about the peanuts being in the blue box.

As I walked out of the building tears shredded down my eyes uncontrollably.

Why am I only one who becomes the one people use when they want to forget or get over someone?

He told me that he loves me and here he his hugging his ex. I don't care about the reason but why am I the one who is feeling as if my heart has been sliced into two?

"Where to ma'am?" Marc asked as I got inside the car.

"Back home,," I said and he nodded before driving off. When I said home, I meant my home.

Everything is just too much for me all of a sudden. He had asked me and has given me time to love him back but I need to overcome my uneasiness before I could confess him that yes, I do love him.

But for that, I need to focus my mind on one thing and at the current time with everything being around its becoming difficult for me to think.

Finally, I decided to go back home for some days to have my mind focused and relax. I thought I would help Em in her wedding and I would get to spend a little time away from Xavier to think. With him being around it was becoming difficult for me to sort out my feelings.

"So, I'll be going back home for some days, you know for helping Em in her wedding,," I told the story which was my reason to leave the house all of a sudden to Lucy and walked up the stairs towards my room.

Chapter 77

Xavier

The meeting turned out to be postponed to the second half.My clients are supposed to have lunch with me and for that I have brought home food specially made by Lucy for my clients.I looked at my watch to read-only thirty minutes left for lunch and I sped up my work of going through the files wanting to finish it on time before they arrive for the lunch.

"Sir, a lady is here to meet you," Ron said as I was reading an important file.

"Who is it, Ron? Ask her to meet me later.I am busy," I said not even looking at him.I adjusted my reading glasses when I saw a fault in the file.Taking the pencil, from the pen stand I circled the mistake and looked up when Ron cleared his throat.

"What is it?" I asked taking the glasses off.

"The lady refuses to leave," he said and that made me wonder who the lady is.

"What is her name again?," I asked raising my eyebrows when he adjusted his tie looking uncomfortable.

"Claudia Thatcher," he said and the pencil fell down on the table from my hands.

"What?," I whispered and he nodded in response.

I stood near the window looking out towards the sky.I still remember the day when I found her cheating me with my only best friend Daniel.I felt as if my heart has been torn into two.I loved her so much that whenever she asked me for something, I would lose my mind and would go any extent just see her happy.I was angry with her and I remained to be angry with her for playing with my feelings and emotions all these years for which I was never able to move on and knowingly hurt many women but in the end, she came into my life and I learned to forgive and move on.

My Angel.

She taught me that I would only hurt myself if I hurt others.Even though I treated her badly, she was always there for me whenever I needed her.It is unbelievable how pure her heart is.She has no ill feelings towards anyone.She forgave me so easily and made me realize what exactly love is.

Now, when I think about it a smile forms on my face whenever I think about that old Xavier.*He was really stupid and a big jerk!*

I can't believe that I am the same Xavier whose heart was filled with hatred.But then, being in love with Angela I realized that I never really loved Claudia.The only one whom I would love until my end and would actually die for is my Angela.I just can't see her upset.Her smile brightens my day and a lone tear makes my heart clench.I didn't even realize when someone entered my room and stood behind me until the one cleared his throat.

I turned around to find Ron but a certain person standing behind him got my attention.

Claudia

"Sir,Ms.Claudia is here to meet you," Ron said as he turned and looked at Claudia.

Earlier when Ron said that Claudia is here to meet me, I thought I would be upset and angry at the same time.When I broke up with her I promised myself never to meet her ever again and never to trust any woman.But things have changed; as I looked at her I felt nothing.Not even a trace of anger surfaced my body nor did I feel any pain.

I guess I forgave her the day I started loving Angela.

"Claudia," I said and a smile formed on my face.A genuine one as she looked at me with wide disbelief eyes.*I guess I am not the only one who thought I would be angry seeing her.*

I looked back at Ron and nodded at him.With a nod, he turned around and left us alone.

Both of them exchanged glances but as soon as Ron left closing the door shut behind him, Claudia's grey eyes fell on me and she looked around perhaps, trying to avoid my gaze.

"It's been a long time," I said starting a conversation with her.She looked back up and rolled the hair that fell on her right cheek back to her ear.

"Yeah, it's beenlong," she said with a half-smile and once again averted her gaze away from me.Now, when I looked at her, she has changed a lot.Back then, she used to have very short hair, and she would always dress up like a supermodel but today, leaving her face everything about looks changed.Her hair was now long, her dress didn't look that updated.She looked as if she has not updated her closet for a long time.Her grey eyes looked dull, almost dead.She was wearing a brown trench coat and it reminded me of the day when I last saw her.

Surely, she wore it the day when she came back to my mansion begging to talk.But I was so angry and hurt for she cheated on me, I ordered the guards to take her away from my sight.I can never forget that day but it's really surprising to me that I didn't even feel an ounce of pain when I remember it now.

She looked up and opened her mouth to speak when my phone rang.

"Excuse me," I said as I picked up my phone from the table and later added a quiet "Please" as I looked at the caller ID to read Dominic.

"Hello?," I said as I picked his call.

"Let's go partyyy. . "

"Shut up,," I said and disconnected the call.

"Yeah, So?," I said as I looked back at her to find her giving me a disbelieving look.

"What?," I asked as I furrowed my eyebrows thinking whether there was something on my face for which she was giving me the look.

"You said Please,," she said still in a disbelieved state and I smiled shoving my hands back into my pocket.

"Does it sound odd?," I asked amazed upon myself as I went back to my seat and gestured her to take the seat before me on the chair, which she obliged.

"No, but it's so very . .I mean unlike of you,," she said and I looked up at her raising an eyebrow.

"Well you can say it's her fault,," I showed her my wedding ring and as her eyes fell on my ring, she nodded and pulled her coat more to her.

"I see,," she muttered and I looked back at my phone when it beeped again indicating a text message.It read "C'mon PLEASE let's go to a club and party," from Dominic.

Why? What's the occasion?

I texted him back.

"So how have you been?," I asked as I kept the phone back on the table and concentrated back on her.

"I am doing good and how are you?," she askedand I smiled, a genuine smile as I replied looking at Angel's picture on my laptop "I am doing absolutely fantastic,"

"I can see that,," she said all of a sudden and I looked back at her.

"I mean you are smiling every now and then,," she shrugged her shoulder and I thought about it internally about what she meant.

"So?," I asked wanting to know why she was here.She intertwined her fingers and exhaled out a breath before looking up at me.

"I am here to ask for forgiveness, Xavier" her eyes glistened and all of a sudden her behavior made me uncomfortable.

Chapter 78

"About the past?," I asked and she nodded.

"Look Claudia," I heaved a sigh.

"Whatever happened between us was in the past and will always remain in the past.We or you can't change it but if you are here to ask for forgiveness then you don't have to,"

"Because I have already forgiven you." Her face lit up as soon as she heard that and I gave her a half smile.

"Really?," she askedas she looked with hope-filled in her eyes.

"Yes.I have really forgiven you a long ago because if it wasn't for you then I would have never met her,," I completed as I thought about it.

"Her?," I heard her confused voice.

"My wife.Angela Knights," I said and she nodded.

"You are in love with her," she muttered and I intervened her own self-conversation saying "Love is just a small word to describe how actually I feel for her," I said and she nodded.

"I see," she replied.

"Yeah.I have forgiven you,," I smiled at her when all of a sudden a memory of her with a kid flashed my mind.

"Oh, yeah, that reminds me you have a kid, I mean you have a daughter now, don't you?," I asked and she looked up nodding at me.

"I saw her that day at the mall.She really resembles Daniel a lot and that remind me where is Dan-" as soon as I uttered the word Daniel she burst out crying before me and I got up from my seat shocked because of her behavior.

"What? What happened?," I asked as she sobbed and I picked up a tissue from the box and handed it to her.

"Oh, I'm sorry," she said once she stopped and wiped her eyes using the tissue that I gave her.

"Daniel…we are not together," she said in a breath and I looked at her in shock.

"What?"

"I mean weren't you both together-" I said but couldn't complete my own sentence when she burst out once again.

"Hey, hey," I said and made my way to her.

"What happened?," I asked as I kept my hand on her shoulder, patting her back awkwardly wanting her to stop.

"He abandoned me and Sophia when he knew of me being pregnant with his daughter," she said and broke down before me.I patted her back restraining myself from asking her why he left her.

"He said it was just a mistake.He was not ready to take my daughter's and my responsibility as he was too young to be a father and a husband.I can't believe I cheated you with him because I thought he loved me as much as I did to him.I loved him so much that I went so far of cheating you but all I got at the end is betraYeahl,," she cried and I removed my hand from her back but as soon as I did that like a bolt she stood up and hugged me encircling her arms around my torso.

"Xavier I'm so sorry.I'm so sorry I hurt you for a man like him.I am really sorry please forgive me,," she sobbed on my chest and awkwardly I patted her back and asked her quietly to stop crying but as soon as she stopped I tried to free myself from her but then I felt her arms roaming on my back.

"You still smell the same.God, I have missed this so much-"

"Claudia!," I removed her hand from my body and pushed a little away from me as I took few steps back.She looked at me with her eyes filled with hope but then I ran through my hair and went back to my chair.

"It's really good to see after a long time Claudia," I said as I composed myself.

"Xavier, can we pleaseforget the past and move on?"

"Exactly! Move on.I have already moved on.I have my Angel with me now and I love her so muc—"

"You are lying!" all of a sudden and slammed her hands on my table.

"I know everything.That woman was forced on you by your father, didn't she? You don't love her! You are just saying this because you are still angry on me," her rage-filled voice echoed in the room as I looked at her with wide eyes for her sudden outburst.

"You love me dammit! Only me," she breathed out once she completed her sentence.Her eyes filled with rage and her words venomous which almost made me cringe for even thinking that I loved a woman like her but if it wasn't for the poisonous side of me that Angela couldn't succeed to wipe away from me, the side which I kept hidden to myself only to protect my love if ever anyone tried to hurt her surfaced when I heard Claudia's little outburst.

I tried my best to be calm with her.

"Are you done?," I asked once she realized what she did.

"No! I mean Xavier," she pursed her lips and wiped away her tears using the back of her hand.

"I knew it.You can never change,," I said as I intertwined my fingers and kept both of my hands by the elbow on the table.

"Xavier try to understand.I had my men investigate it and I found out she married you for money.That woman... your wife isn't worth your lov-," she couldn't complete as I intervened.

"Oh, really? Then who is worth my love? You?" I asked with sarcasm clear in my voice.

"You don't underst—"

"I don't need to understand.And how dare you put your men behind my wife?Who asked you to invade our private space? I can sue you for invading our private life Ms.Hemsworth," I asked as calmly as I could even though my feet were shaking wanting to run up to her and throw her out of my office building.

"I know I shouldn't have done this but I did this only for you, Xavier.I still love you.That woman will ruin you.She will completely destroy you,," she finished and I punched the switch next to my table in anger.

"You are seriously naive,," I smiled and she looked at me with confusion.

"Right now you don't understand who really I am.Let me introduce myself to you," I said as I got up from my seat.

"Hello, I am Xavier Knights, the only heir of this Knight co.and the man who deeply loves a woman named Angela Knights so much, that if a single drop of tear escapes her eyes, I go berserk and if she smiles then also I go all berserk thinking I have achieved every goal in my life.I love her so much, that I can go up to any extent just to have her near me.Just me,," I slammed my hands on the table and matched her eye level.

"I love her to the extent where I want her to destroy me.Only she has the power to destroy me, you are correct on that.I will give her everything that belongs to me even if its money, love or my life.She owns me now.Not just me but she my body even my soul belongs to her and only her and do you know what? I don't ask anything in return in exchange for all this.You got the wrong person in this.I guess your 'men' didn't investigate it properly, but here I am the one who is Villain.I am the one who has kept her only to me.I am the one who loves her so much that I can do anything for her,"

"And by anything…it simply means anything," I completed with a promise in my voice.She shuddered in her place under my gaze and opened her mouth to speak but I cut her off.

"If I ever see you lingering around her than remember this, I will rip your soul out of your body and make sure you to go through more sufferings than you already have.Don't underestimate my calmness as my patience to tolerate every rubbish you speak.My patience level is still the same.I am still the same but more vicious than one could ever imagine of but that is all for people like you.You don't have any idea how much I love her.Take this as a warning Ms.Claudia Thatcher," I completed and she visibly gulped.

"Now, it was great meeting after a long time,," I smiled as I sat back on my chair and gestured the two man behind her.Reluctantly, she looked back to find my bodyguards behind her.

"They will show you the way out," I smiled and gestured them to escort her out.

"Xavier I…"

"Mark my words Claudia if my Angel gets hurt because of you, then you will see how amazing of a husband I can be...I will snatch everything away from you and everything means…" I looked up at her and gave her a wicked grin "Everything!"

As soon as she left I heaved a sigh and looked at the image of Angel on my laptop.She was being followed and they invaded her privacy.I wonder how she would react when I tell all this to her.

My phone rang andI picked it up without even looking at the caller ID: "Hello?"

"Let's go partyyy-"

"Shut the fuck up, Dominic!" I snapped and hung up on him.His timing is always bad.

Chapter 79

As I made my way back home, I looked at the meds in my hand which Ron gave me earlier.He told me that Angel came to my office and handed him the meds and asked him to inform me not to eat box which had peanuts in it.That made me wonder why did she not meet me? Why did she leave without seeing me?

"Angel?" I called for her once I searched for her in the kitchen but surprisingly unlike the other days, there was no aroma of her cooking instead I found Lucy chopping vegetables.

"Where is she?," I asked as she looked up and kept the knife aside.

"Oh, dear, she is in her room," Lucy smiled and went back to chop the veggies.

"She isn't cooking today?," I asked and Lucy nodded her head no.

"Ah okay," I said and turned around. It's perfectly fine if I don't get to eat the food made by her just for a day.I mean it's totally her choice but I can't ignore the fact that I will miss her delicious food.Everything she cooked, I loved it.

"Angel?," I called as I threw my bag on the bed and untied my tie as I undid my shirt button my eyes fell on a bag.

"Xavier, oh, you're back,," I saw her as she walked out of the walk-in-closet and took my bag from the bed.

"Ron told me you came to the office today. Why did you leave without seeing me?," I asked as I got rid of my shirt.

"OhI am really sorry but I was in a hurry to get back home…oh, and did you get the meds that I handed him for you?," she asked and I nodded.

"Why is that bag out here?," I asked pointing the bag.

"I am flying back home tomorrow for Emily and Lucas's wedding preparation,," she said and I gave her an incredulous look.

"What? Tomorrow? But you told me that the wedding is in the next month.I mean why are you going so soon?," I asked as I threw the shirt on the bed and immediately she picked it up and folded it on her arms.

"Xavier there's a lot of work for me to do.I know I am sorry but it came out all of a sudden and she called me suddenly.And you know I am from both sides.I will have to prepare from my brother's

side as well as from my best friend's side.Lot of work,," she smiled and I pulled her from her waist closer to me.

"But why tomorrow? I will also come with you,"I said determined to go with her.

"What will you do there Xavier?," she laughed.

"I will help! Or should I call Emily and -"

"No! No. .I mean you don't need to do that!," she said and I stared at her face.She looked different today.She was avoiding any eye contact with me.*Why?*

"Look at me,," I said but she kept on avoiding.

"Angela look at me,," I said and this time she did with a small smile.

"What's wrong?," I asked as I took in her appearance. She looked little pale and almost as if she was in a lot of tension.

"Nothing. Just a headache,," she mumbled and kept her head on my chest.

"A headache? Are you not filling well? You are not going tomorrow in this condit-,," she cut me off "No! It's nothing. I am just thinking how will I manage everything from both sides. I mean it's a wedding and I don't want anything to go wrong,," she said and I nodded.

"Should I hire some organizers then?," I asked as I ran my hand through her hair.

"No, it's not needed," she laughed and looked into my eyes.

"I'll be fine. I want to do it myself,"

"But Angela,"

"I am fine, Xavier," she smiled and that was all for me to bend down and capture her mouth in a passionate kiss.

"I am letting you go," I said and she smiled "But only this time. Next time I'll go with you. If you need anything then just give me a call. Don't go all reckless with your health while you are busy preparing for the wedding. Make sure to rest well and don't forget to take your food in time. You can't run here there carelessly, I'll not be there to hold you if you stumble so please," as soon as I said that she cracked up, her laughter filled the room.

"You sound like my dad, Xavier oh, my god! I am not an elementary kid," she laughed and gazed into my eyes.

"I know but this is the first time we are going to be separated. I can't imagine a single day without you," I said and kissed her forehead.

"Oh, Xavier," she smiled as she encircled her arms around my neck.

"Why? Why do you worry about me so much?," she asked arching her head as she looked up at me with a lovely smile which almost made me believe that she would tell me any second that she loves me. Her blue orbs looked as if she wanted to ask me so many things but something was holding her back.

"Isn't it obvious? Because I love you," I smiled back at her.

Chapter 80

Living at risk is jumping off the cliff and building your wings on the way down.

-Ray Bradbury

Angela

"I was just saying it like that, I never expected that you would really come here to help me," Emily laughed as she raised up her cup of tea and took a sip.

"Of course I am the only person who can help her best friend at her wedding. Who else did you expect?" I laughed at her and she nodded her head.

"I really thought that you were just bluffing.I seriously thought you wouldn't come.I am really happy," her eyes twinkled with excitement and she sighed with contentment.

"We are going to have so much fun together.I am really excited about my wedding," she said dreamily.

"I am excited too,," I said forcing out a smile all of a sudden feeling little low.

I think she noticed my expression because her smile faded away and she frowned a little saying "What is it, Angie? Is everything alright? Are you not happy with my wedding?" she askedworriedly.She was now seated at the edge of the chair looking at me expectantly wanting to hear my answer.

"What? Of course, I am happy.Everything is alright Em, it's just that I am tired, that's it," I said as I got up from the dining table and made my way towards the kitchen.

Our house is a two storage house with six bedrooms and a guest room.Enough space for the guests who were going to help for the preparation of the wedding.I took a glass and filled it with the orange juice for my dad.

"Okay.I am glad,," she followed me and took the glass from me keeping it on a serving tray.

"So from where do we start?," she askedand I thought about it for a second before replying: "Umm how about selecting a good wedding invitation card?"

"Perfect," she smiled and took the tray with her to my dad.

"Already trying to impress father-in-law are we huh?" I taunted her and she just winked at me before heading off to the lawn.

Macey my cat meowed at me and I picked it up patting its head affectionately.

***

The beeping of my phone disturbed my slumber as I groaned and clicking my tongue in annoyance got up from the bed and walked to the shelf where I had put my phone into the charger.There were three missed calls all from an unknown number and six unread text messages from the same unknown number.

It's a good thing that you chose to stay away from Xavier.

He is mine.

Pick up my calls or you have to face the consequences.

Ignoring me should be your last thing to do because I can harm you very badly.I hate you.

You gold-digging bitch, who do you think you are? I know everything about you.You married him for his money.Just wait until I leak this piece of information to the media.I also have proof against you.If you want me to hand you over the proof thenstay away from Xavier.I won't harm you if you don't get near to my Xavier.

You will be the sole reason for your downfall.

A sigh escaped my mouth as I read those messages again and again. It's not a not a new thing. I have been getting all these types of messages after I married him but from this last two weeks this messages have grown a lot and every time it's from the same number.

At first, I thought it would be one of Xavier's ex but then I remembered that Xavier was never really in any kind of serious relationship. The only woman I knew of him being serious was the lady whom I met and saw her hugging Xavier few weeks ago. What was her name again…Yes, Claudia.

Can it be possible that this messages are from her?

But she has a child now.

Still...

I shook the thought and like always chose to ignore the messages and checked the battery to find its already full.Groggily…I walked to my bed when my phone rang in my hand.

"Xavier," I spoke as I picked up his call and made myself comfortable on the bed.

"Hello beautiful," he chuckled from the other end and a smile broke onto my face.

"Still up?" he askedand I hummed in response as I looked at the time on the digital alarm clock on my night stand to read half past one in the mid night.

"No, I just woke up because of my phone ringing,," I said sleepily and yawned a little.

"Oh, it looks like I disturbed your sleep," he said and I could hear some faint noises in the background like he was typing something on his laptop.

"You are still working? You should sleep Xavier, don't tire yourself.You will fall sick,"

"At least that would make you return back home.I feel lonely sleeping on the bed alone and it seems you don't even miss me," he said and I chuckled at it.

"Now don't be like this, I do miss you," I said truthfully and folded my left arm across my chest.

"Then come back,"

"I can't!"

"See? You don't even miss me" he replied and I groaned inwardly.

"Xavier you know why I am here.I can't just go back yet.The preparations have just started and we have hardly a two weeks before the wedding.I just can't leave Em and my brother and come back.It will be over in two weeks and besides I thought you are also coming at the end of this week," I said as I remembered Em speaking on phone to Xavier about him coming here.

"How do you know that? Ah! She told you didn't she?" he groaned and I laughed a little.

"No, she didn't.It's just that I kind of overheard your conversation in this noon,," I said and he huffed.

"At least you could have acted a little as if you don't know anything.You ruined my surprise planning," hefaked cried a little.

"Oh, I'm so sorry…not!"I joked and he chuckled.

"Little devil," he mumbled and this time I huffed at him "Oh, so now I am a devil,," I taunted and he cleared his throat before speaking "Angel Devil," he replied and that made me laugh.

"Decide what I am exactly to you.An Angel or a Devil,"

"Decided…you are my little devil now," he joked and I scoffed at him.

"Wow," I exclaimed.

"Joking my girl.You'll always remain my angel," he said and even though I smiled at these I didn'treply anything to him.

"I am tired.I am going to sleep.Bye…Good night," I said and even though he askedme not to hang up, I hung up on him and stared at my phone.With a beep a notification popped up on my screen about a text message and it was none other than Xavier and it read "Good night my Angel.Sleep tight * kissing heart emoticon*," I smiled at it and replied with blush emoticon before keeping the phone on the night stand and went off to sleep.

Chapter 81

***

"The date has been finalized…The guest list has been sorted…The banquet halls has been booked, what else is left?"

"Everything is done.The designer called me and she said my wedding dress is ready.We just need to pick it up from her boutique,"Em said and I nodded at her.

"Great! Let's go and we can also shop for you shoes today," I said and she nodded but then he phone beeped and she picked it up from the bed as she read it.

"Oh, I am sorry.Dad is asking me to come home.Will you please do me a favor and please pick of my dress?," she askedand I nodded.

"What about the shoes?" I asked and watched as she paced around picking up her scarf from the chair and she put on her trench coat.

"Don't worry about it.I'll make some time and get it by my own," she said and I nodded in agreement.

"Do you want a lift?" she askedand I nodded as I hurriedly put on my coat and picked up my purse before we walked out of the house to her sedan.

"Will you not stop by to at least try the dress?," I asked she pulled over.

"No, it's alright.You and I have had equal body measurements.Try it for me," she said and I gave her an incredulous look.

"Are you crazy? How can I try your dress?" I scoffed at the thought.

"Why not?" she questioned.

"It's your damn wedding dress,Em!" I said throwing my hands in the air.

"Exactly! It's my wedding dress and I want it to be perfect.So please put it on your body to check the measurements," she said and I glared at her before undoing my seat belt and getting off her car.

"Thank you, I love you bestie," she yelled but I shut the door before she could even complete but she rolled the window down and gave me a puppy eye look.

"I will let the designer about it hmm?" she said and huffing at her I walked towards the direction of the boutique.

~

"We were asked by the bride that you will be checking the measurements," the designer who was a middle aged blonde lady said as she smiled at me professionally showing me her even and perfect teeth.

"I suppose I am,," I said and sighed when I saw the dress.

A white ball gown wedding dress which had minute bead works and had a cut off the shoulder with a low neckline, exposed arms, and long bouffant styled skirt.A wow escaped my mouth as I took in the beautiful dress.

"There's the fitting room ma'am," the lady handed me the dress and showed me the way to the fitting room.

Closing the screen, I got rid of my clothes before cautiously putting on the dress.The dress slipped in comfortably and I tried to reach for the chain on my back for to no avail I succeeded in closing the zip.Finally, I decided to reach for the lady's help and as I pulled the screen aside a gasp escaped my mouth as I looked at the person standing facing me just before the fitting room.

"Xa-Xavier?" I managed to speak still in my shocked state.He smiled brightly, wrinkles forming on the edge of his eyes as he came closer to me turned me around zipping the chain up.

"You look breathtaking," he leaned closer and placed a kiss on my shoulder and that broke me out of my shock state.

"Xavier what-" I turned around hastily to face him. "What are you doing here and ho- how are you here?," I held his arms and even shook him in his place.He chuckled and wrapped his arms around my waist pulling me closer to him.

"I am here just to watch you in this dress.I couldn't miss this opportunity since I missed it in our wedding." All of a sudden he had this gum expression on his face probably thinking of the day when we got married and the way he treated me.

"Xavier," I said slowly and reached forward and hugged him wrapping my arms around his torso.

"Did you miss me?" he askedand I hummed in response.

"You surprised me," I mumbled against his chest.

"You look beautiful in this dress," he said and I removed my hands from his body before taking a step back.

"Tell me, is this what you were planning with Em? Did Em tell you where I was?" I asked and he nodded before grinning.

"Ah…I can't believe you tricked me into believing that you will be arriving this Sunday," I crossed my arms over my chest and pouted at him.

He laughed at me and ruffled my head messing my hair in the process "No!" I exclaimed trying to stop him.

"Such an adorable couple," I heard the women in the boutique and I looked to my side to find some ladies standing near the designer dresses looking our way.Xavier seemed to avoid them as he continued to messing my hair.

"I-I need to change," a blush formed on my cheek and I handed my phone to him before picking up my dress and running back into the fitting room.Even though the dress was far from being tight or uncomfortable still I managed to breath in and out deeply after I put the dress off my body.

"Wow," I sighed as I handed the dress to the salesgirl and asked her to pack it.

"Xavier," I called for him as I watched him looking into my phone.

"Did somebody call," I asked as he had a gloomy expression and he had his a scowl on his face.

"Nope! Nothing.Here..." He handed me my phone and I looked at it to find no missed calls or any sort of notifications.

"Let's have something to eat first.I am hungry," he said and I nodded my head as he shoved his hand into his pant pockets and looked out of the glass door towards the road.

"Xa-," I was cut off by the lady who handed me the bag with the dress in it.

"Thank you," I said and turned around to Xavier. He smiled at me and reached for my hand intertwining his finger with mine we walked out of the boutique.

Chapter 82

"As I had imagined, you look absolutely gorgeous in this," I complimented Em as she wore the dress that I had tried beforehand. The dress was made only for her, even if I had worn it to check its measurement still I didn't look that beautiful as she looked in it.

She grinned looking at me in the mirror and then turned around to face me.

"Oh, Angie I can't wait for my wedding," she hugged me excitedly and I returned the hug smiling at her happiness.

"I have seen you so happy before… ever," I teased her and she moved back from and twirled on her place holding the skirt of the dress.

"Well, that's because I am really happy.I feel like out of the world," she said and I huffed at her raising an eyebrow.

"I knew it that you are an alien," I remarked and took a seat on her bed.

"Really?" she scowled at me and that made me laugh at her.

"And that reminds me…you traitor.Who is your friend? Me or Xavier? You helped him trick me? That means you knew I was overhearing you the time you were talking with him on the phone?"

She stared at me for some seconds and then grinned goofily before running into her walk-in-closet to perhaps change.

"Of course I knew it!" she yelled from her closet and I shook my head at her before getting off the bed and making my way to the closet where she handed me the dress.

"Did you buy your heels?," I asked as I kept the dress on the bed and waited for her to come out.

"Nah! I think I'll just make some time today in the evening for it," she said as she walked out of the closet.

"Good.Then I'll be leaving now," I said as I picked up my purse but she ran up to me and stood in front of me blocking me from the door.

"What?," I asked as she crossed her arm and looked at me.

"Is everything okay between you two?," she said all of a sudden which made me scowl at her.

"What are you talking about?," I asked as kept my purse down on the bed and took a seat.

I looked out of the window of her room when a certain scene of the past played before my eyes.The lady named Claudia who came out of nowhere and took a seat before me and told me that she had a past with Xavier.The day where she was hugging him and he looked anything but uncomfortable with the one who hurt him badly in the past.

"Angie! Angela." Em snapped her finger before my eyes breaking my thoughts.I shook my head and looked up at her.

"I know that I shouldn't be asking questions about your marital life but when I was talking to him on the phone, it looked like you didn't even ask him to come with you.I invited him and he said he would surprise you," she said and took a seat before me on the chair.

"Is everything okay between you two? I don't know why but you seem kind of off from the day you came here.Is it because of him? Does he not treat you wel—"

"Of course he does.He is really sweet when it comes to me and he said…" I stopped in the mid-sentence as I reminisced the day when he said he loved me.

"He said?" she urged me to talk.

I smiled at her before replying, "That he loves me." I bit down on my lips when I felt my butterflies in my stomach and strange emotion lacing up my body.

"Really?Wow," she exclaimed.

"And you? What did you reply?" she looked excited all of a sudden as she looked at me expectantly wanting to hear an answer which she hoped I would tell her.I knew I would break her hopes so I kept my mouth shut and averted my gaze to the floor.

"Oh, my heavens.You don't like him?" she said with an astonished tone but then as soon as she said that I looked back at her with wide eyes.

"What are you saying? Of course, I like him," I said and huffed at her when a smile formed on her face.

"Then what is it that is holding you back?" she asked and I couldn't answer her when in reality I was the one who was having problems understanding my feelings.

"What is it?" she asked,which made me look back at her.

"Recently I met a woman named Claudia ThatcherI was in a cafe when we met.She just popped out of nowhere and took a seat before me on my table," I finished, remembering the day when I met the woman.

"What about her?"

"She was the first to talk to me and I got to know that she was Xavier's first love and his ex-fiancé," Em had an unreadable expression plastered on her face as she took in what I just said.

"Okay? Then?" she seemed interested now and I told her the whole story after that.

"So you mean, she popped out of nowhere and told you she is Mr.Knights ex- fiancé…then she also told you that she cheated on him.Then you saw your husband hugging her the same day you met her," as she completed I pulled my legs up on the bed.

"Did you even tell him that you have already met her?" Em asked.

I shook my head.

"Why not?"

"I don't think that's something important," I said and looked down towards the floor.

"I don't understand, what do you mean by all this.?How is this incident connected with you not giving any reply to his confession, Angie? Wait! Didn't you just tell me that he confessed to you that he loves you?," she asked and I nodded at her.

"Then what is your problem?" she asked and all I could do in reply was to sigh and I fell on my back on the bed staring at the ceiling.

"Okay!" I heard her sighing and the next moment she came next to me and lied down next to me staring the ceiling just like me.

"Let's play a game," she said and I looked at her in confusion.

"What do you mean?" I asked as I couldn't understand her.

"I'll just ask you some questions and all you have to do is to reply back in simple 'yes' or 'no' format, okay?"

"Why?" I chuckled at her.

Chapter 83

"You can't speak anything else or block me in the middle.You are bound to answer and your answer should only be with yes or no.Nothing else.It's a simple game and you can't skip a question.In short, you have to answer," she said, enunciating the last sentence trying to get it clear that I have to answer which made me scoff at her.

"Why should I follow it?"

"Because I invented the game," she retorted and I rolled my eyes at her.

"What a liar," I mumbled to myself.

"I heard it! Anyways, first question…Do you like him?" she asked and as soon as she said the word 'like' my heart began to race against my chest.I didn't even know why my heart reacted that way but took in a deep breath and made up my that I would be honest.

"Yes," I replied without any hesitation.

"Do you think he likes you like?" she asked and a smile spreads on my face as I thought about it.

"Yes," I replied because I knew it that he clearly liked me.

"Does he treat you right?" she asked and that made me think of our past.I had no choice but to marry him.Even though it was just a marriage deal I had to marry him and believed that our arrange marriage will bring the best out of us and we would get through it together.I never really had any idea that he was forced into this and he didn't really want to marry me.I thought his father that deal with me… So, I guessed his son might have no problem with it.

If ever I had known about him not wanting to marry me then I would have done every possible thing to persuade him to call off the wedding.And regarding the money that he paid for my father, I would've begged him to let me some time to arrange the money.

It was heartbreaking and painful for me because I had to suffer Xavier's wrath but then I was stuck in the middle not knowing what to do.I couldn't end the marriage because I had made this deal with his father and he had paid for my father's medical bill and to top of that my father was not really well and I didn't really want him to worry for me when he was not in a good condition suffering from financial crisis and health issues.

But then everything changed when Xavier asked for forgiveness for the way he treated me.He began to take care of me and unknowingly I started to grow dependent on him, even more, when

he saved me from John Winters.He showed me a side which he never showed to anyone else and that made me like him.

"Yes," I replied with a smile plastered on my face realizing some things.

"Do you think he was genuine when he confessed? That he loves you?" she asked and the day when he confessed played before my eyes.

Even his words kept playing into my head when he kissed me.I was too shocked.He was calm and before he confessed his eyes held determination while he confessed his eyes held generosity and after he confessed his eyes held aspiration to achieve something.

"Yes," I replied.

"Do you think his love would ever stop loving you?"As soon as he said that I pulled myself up and sat on the bed thinking about it.Again, for some reasons, my heart seemed to be beating very fast as if I had ran a marathon.

Why does this make me feel disturbed all of a sudden? The mere thought brings a surge of anxiety.It makes me depressed.I don't really want him to stop loving me.But…

Many a time he had proven himself that he truly and sincerely loves me and until today I had never really doubted it.

"No," I replied and got up from the bed picking up my purse as hurriedly as I could because something had struck in me and I had all of a sudden realized something.

"Do you think that you can also ever fall in love with him?" I heard her as I reached for the doorknob.

"Yes," I replied without any hesitation and without any reluctance.And I was of it from the bottom of the heart when I replied that. I mean,why couldn't I fall in love with him and how couldn't I when he has taken every possible step closer to me then I could too because there was no doubt that I liked him and I liked him in a way I have never liked anyone.

I like him not because he said he loves me but because for the person he truly is.

As I walked out of her house, a smile remained plastered on my face as I thought about it.Even in the whole way I kept on thinking about the time we had spent together.

I can't really believe that I became jealous.I was feeling insecurities and was kind of scared that he might still have feelings for his ex but he said he loved me.And if it was him who told me that he loves me then it is what it is.There is no escape.

I laughed a little thinking about it and raked a hand through my hair feeling little weird.How could I not understand this feeling? Why would I have been jealous all of a sudden?

The lady beside me in the bus looked at me weirdly when I laughed but still I couldn't hold myself.

As I got off the bus and walked back to my house,I saw him coming out of the house.

"Xavier!" I called for him and as soon as he saw me he stopped.

"Angel?" he said as I took a jog towards him.

"Didn't I tell you that I would pick you from Emily's house?" he asked and I did was to smile at him.

"It's alright," I muttered.

"What is it, you look in a good mood," he said as he angled his head towards the side and looked at me with a smile.

"Let's go in.It's cold today," I said as I laced my arms with his and pulled him with me.

"Well—" He started but I cut him off

"I have something to tell you," I said and beamed with happiness.My heart fluttered a little when he smiled showing me his perfectly white teeth.

"What is it?" he asked all of a sudden looking eager to know.

"Not today," I laughed a little as I walked past Danny in the hall and walked towards my bedroom.

"Are you coming?" I heard Danny asking Xavier.

"You all carry on.I'll be there," Xavier replied before jogging after me.

"Are you all going somewhere?" I asked and

He hummed in response, "To the pool."

"Oh, great!," I smiled as I pulled off my coast and kept it on the chair.

"What do you want to tell me?" he urged as he encircled me in his arms from my back and rested his chin on my shoulder.

"I'll tell you…but not today."

"Then?"

"Tomorrow for sure," I said as I turned around and looked straight into his eyes.

"Okay?" he chuckled and raised an eyebrow at me.

"I will send you the time and place through a text message. Will you come?," I asked and he nodded looked confused.

"Don't be confused." Standing on my toes, I placed a kiss on his cheek. He seemed to be taken aback by that. But as soon as he came back to his senses he tried to pull me closer for a real kiss but before he could do that I stepped out of his hold and walked to the bathroom.

"My brothers are waiting for you. You should get going," I said from my shoulder when I heard my phone ringing.

"Xavier, who is it?" I asked as I remembered keeping my phone on the chair while I pulled off my coat.

"The customer care," he yelled back.

By the time I got out of the bathroom he had already left. I assumed he had accompanied my brothers to play pool. So all I did was to switch my laptop on and surfed through the internet searching for some good ideas for a date night.

Chapter 84

You bitch! How dare you avoid my calls.

I will ruin you.

"Who could it be?" I mumbled to myself as I drove off to pick Danny and Lucas up from the broker's office.

The messages that I read on Angela's phone while we were in that boutique had all my attention. No doubt the anonymous person has only one thing in his or her mind, and that is to hurt my girl.

Clicking my tongue in annoyance, I pulled my car in the side of the road and looked out of the window resting my hand on the steering wheel.

"What will I do with this woman?" I muttered, thinking about Angela. She could've told me about getting threats messages and calls but no she has to take things lightly. But then I can't really blame her. She might be thinking about me. As far as I know her, she would've thought I would be disturbed if she told me about it.

But then…I feel even more disturbed than I already am after reading those by myself.

How is she even keeping up with these disturbing messages?

The buzzing of my phone got my attention as I picked it up as soon as I saw the caller ID.

"Who is it?" I asked directly coming to the point.

"Are you sure you want to know this?" Dominic asked from the other end that made me ball my fist.

"I just hope it isn't the person that I think it is,," I said through gritted teeth as I looked out of the window and rolled down the window screen. A gust of wind hit my face and I raked my hand through my hair, aggravated by the situation.

"Okay…so the number that you gave me to check out its owner is none other than the person whom you think it could be," he completed and as soon as he said that I punched the steering wheel in anger and got out of the car.

"You sure?" Iasked wanting to make it clear, thinking he might have got it wrong but then he replied: "Name…Claudia Thatcher. Age—"

"Enough!" I cut him off and disconnected his call looking up at the sky.

I tried to calm my nerves but just her name peaked up my rage.Seething with anger, I kicked the tire and clutched my hair.

"How dare you.How fucking dare you mess with me even after I warned you not to interfere with my life, Claudia?"Even though I could hardly control my anger, I managed to take deep breaths to calm my nerves down.A wicked chuckle escaped my mouth when I thought about it. "You shouldn't have done that.You shouldn't have fucking done that." I chuckled as I looked up at the sky. Ah! What a wonderful day…tsk… You ruined it. You have called it upon yourself, Claudia.Called it upon yourself.I used to think that you were a smart woman.But I see you don't even have a brain," I muttered as I rubbed my face, using the back of my hand and got back inside the car and ignited the engine before driving off to pick Angela's brothers up.

The last message that I read was: Tomorrow.Lincoln Park Lagoon.Sharp at six in the evening.If you don't reach in time then consider the proof that I have against you leaked to the media.

And I don't like waiting.

I had managed to forward all the screenshot of the messages to my phone from Angela's phone last night when she was in the bathroom.Then I had Dominic find up the owner of the number.To the very end, I was hoping that it shouldn't be the person whom I had actually thought of when I first read the messages.But then to my extreme annoyance, it was her…Claudia.

"I guess you'll have to face me now," I muttered as I parked the car at the roadside when I marked Lucas and smiled at him putting a mask on over my true emotions that were building up due to a certain person.If anything that I want now is to keep Angel out of all these things.

She would be the last that I would ever want to see upset.And if that means I would've had to keep some things just to myself for her safety then I would definitely do it.

"I hope we are not burdening you," Lucas said as he got in and on the passenger seat while Danny chose to seat in the back.

"Of course not,what are you even saying?" I laughed a little at it before driving off.

"You are not coming inside?" Danny asked as they got out of the car.

"No, I have some work to take care off. I'll be back soon," I said and they looked at each other before nodding.

Chapter 85

From my rearview mirror, I watched as she walked past my car completely oblivious to the fact that I was seating right inside the car watching her moves.Dressed up in a navy blue trench coat and knee-high black boots, she walked with a look of determination in her eyes as if she was going to win a war.

That made me scoff at her.I looked at the time to find it only fifteen minutes left to six in the evening and yet she was already here claiming that she doesn't like to be kept waiting.

Every single thing about her is fake.Even her own words.

I watched from my car's window screen as she went near to the pond and stood in the middle of the small bridge that went above the pond.I was some meters away from her and the trees played abig part in hiding my car.

She looked around and then looked at her watch.Annoyance was clearly visible on her face as she muttered something and looked as if she would pull her hair in frustration any second.

The clock read half past six in the evening and still, she was standing there thinking Angela would come.I scoffed at her naivety.If it wasn't for me deleting every single message from Angela's phone that I read then perhaps Angel would really have been the one present instead of me.

I watched as she pulled her phone out from her bag and I took it as my queue.Getting out of the car, I walked up to her and snatched the phone away from her.She gasped before turning around with wide eyes.

"You don't really look happy seeing me here now, do you?" I asked as I rolled her phone in between my thumb and index finger.

"Xa-Xavier, oh, what a surprise!" I noticed her voice shaking when she talked.Beads of sweat formed on her forehead and,as if she noticed that I noticed it, using the back of her hand she wiped it away before giving out a nervous laugh.

"Out of all the places…we meet here in Chicago.Isn't it a lovely coin—"

"I told you not to interfere with my life,"I said and gave her pointed sharp gaze.She shifted on her place and I could even feel her tension even though we were standing pretty far away from each other.

"What are you talking about?" she tried to fake innocence and her effort made me chuckle.

"You think this all these tricks are going to work on me?"

"I think I should leave," she said and tried to walk past me but was stopped when I held her arm and pushed her to stand right before me.

"Ow! What do you think you are doing?" she yelled at me and jerked her arm away from my hold.

"Feel happy that I am unlike you I am not crossing my limits.I don't really like to play dirty but you've bound me to take actions," the words gritted out of my teeth as I glared at her.

"I warned you not to come closer to my Angel and yet you tried to abuse her verbally and tried to upset her.I really used to think that you were a smart woman Claudia, but your actions speak the opposite.It seems you don't really have a brain,"

"Mind your language, Xavier!" she barked at me.

"Or what?" I challenged.

"Or..." Suddenly she smirked and her eyes lit up as she put her hand into her bag and fished out a drive.

"I'll hand this over to the media," She grinned and swung the drive before my eyes.

"Really?" I asked and all she did was to grin victoriously.

"Do you think some mere photos and videos are going to break Angela away from me?" I said as I noticed her smile fading a little.

"Oh! You are really naïve, Claudia," I scoffed at her.

"Did you really think that I couldn't buy it back from them?" I said and smiled when her smile completely faded off her face.

"Tha-That's nonsense.That is impossible," she stuttered a little before glaring at me.

"Nothing is impossible for a person who has power.And I believe I do have to power to protect the ones that I love,"

"Enough of it." Clicking her tongue, she rubbed her face with her palm before looking up at me.

"I just have enough of all your dramas.What do you know what love is?" Suddenly she had this uproar in her voice that made me narrow my eyes at her.

"Love.Love.Love.What do you think love is, huh? Do you think she loves you?" A dark chuckle escaped her mouth as she looked back towards the pond. "The only thing that you need to survive in this world is money and a person like you who was born with a silver spoon in mouth won't ever understand.So what if I blackmailed your wife? You just don't seem to move on.How long are you going hold this grudge against me?" She punched the right side of my shoulder.

"You always had everything.A good family,a mother who loved you, a billionaire father, money everything, and me...I had nothing.Even Daniel left me for money.He kicked his own blood over money.Money is everything!" she screamed at my face.

She closed her eyes and took deep breaths before opening them and when she did…her eyes only held hatred and jealousy for me.

"It was really a sight to behold when I saw you crying and kneeling before me hurt because I had cheated upon you with Daniel.I really can't express how satisfied I felt when I saw a rich brat like you kneeling before me all broken," as soon as she said that my nostrils flared up enraged but then I balled up my fists wanting to calm down.

"You thought I cheated on you because I loved Daniel, didn't you? Huh! What a loser.I never really loved him.Everything I did with him was only meant to hurt you.I rejected you the first time when you proposed me wanting to see you hurt but then the happiness I got when you broke down was everything to me.Because I hated you.I had always hated you from the day we met."

And as much as I found myself shocked,I felt pity on her for her condition.

"I was raised up a drunk father who would always beat me to death whenever he was angry and my mother. Her whole life spent cleaning the floors of people like you yet she died because she didn't had enough money to treat herself.And I… I never really got to know what happiness really is.I didn't have enough money to feed myself for which I started to depend on guys who were fool enough to fall on my charms and they spent money on me trying to woo me.But out of all them, you are the biggest fool to fall for a person who hated you the most," her words were laced with poison and it was enough for me to understand that she was speaking the truth.

"I was jealous of you.While I had no money, you'd spend the money that your parents gave you wildly.I hated you.I hated you so much I can't even express it."

"But then Daniel,that bastard, backstabbed me.After impregnating me, all of a sudden he felt guilty for breaking his best friend's trust and filled up with remorse he ran away.Again… this is all because of you," she screamed at me, pointing an accusing finger in my direction.

"So now when you have nothing left with you, you thought you would blackmail my wife and pull some money out of her sleeves didn't you?" I asked and all she did was to huff at me trying to catch up with her breath.

"Well, all I feel right now after hearing your little confession is…" I stared down at her with a smile. "Relief." As soon as I said that, her eyes widened with shock.

"What? You didn't really expect me to say this didn't you? Oh, then what did you expect? Me kneeling down before you? Begging and crying my eyes out?" I chuckled at her reaction.

"Well,sorry to burst your bubble, but right now I feel anything but sad.I am relieved that you walked out of my life and she walked in.So, I am glad that you chose to leave me only because you were jealous of me and you hated me. I have everything in my life and you have nothing, right?I mean…sure, look what I all have.I am finally the CEO of my father's company.I have a beautiful wife, good friends, balanced relationship with my relatives—everything.And you…even thoughyou won in hurting me and broke me up badly, you still have nothing left."

"With one phone call, all these videos and photos I have of you two will be leaked on the internet.Do you hear me? I can still ruin your career and your life," she tried to blackmail me, but that only made me feel even more pity then I already felt for her.

"I would like you to give it try," Isaid nonchalantly.

"What?"

"I said I would like you to give it a try.Go ahead,call whoever you want," I said and handed her phone urging her to call.

Chapter 85

She stared at me for some seconds before dialing off a number.

"You…" I couldn't help but to open my mouth "You seem to love only one person in this world.Don't you?" and that made her look up at me with a raised eyebrow.

"Your daughter…" Her eyes widened up and her mouth opened and closed like a fish.

"I hope she is doing well," I said, trying to remember her name from the last time Claudia told me about her. "Sophia, was it? Pretty name for a pretty girl,." I don't know what her mind screamed at her when I talked about her daughter but all of a sudden she seemed pale.The color drained from her face and she looked as if she was about to pass out.No wonder...the love of a mother for her child is pure.

"Are you thinking to hurt my baby because of all this?" suddenly her voice sounded like a whimper as she squinted her eyes at me.

"Maybe.I don't really know," I said as I looked down to the floor.

"No.You can't.You-you could never hurt anyone," she screamed at me.

"What are you talking about?" Furrowing my eyebrow,s I watched her fidgeting with her fingers.

"No.You can't involve a little girl in all this.You just can't,," she shouted at the top of her lungs trying to keep her point.

"Well, says who? You involved my wife," I gritted out and the glare that I gave her was enough to lower her voice.

"You've changed," she said and I rolled my eyes at her."You couldn't even hurt me when I rejected you and even cheated on you.Yet you want to make me believe that you would actually hurt my baby?" She laughed at that.

"Well try me," I challenged her.

She stared at me for some minutes as if trying to find any proof on my face that could make her believe that I was lying to her.But I guess, she believed me because the next moment she took several steps back looking frightened.

"Is this how much you love that woman? That you have changed yourself to this far?," she askedand I chose to smile in reply.

As the realization struck her,she huffed out air and pursed her lips before looking at the drive that she was holding.

"Okay.Fine.I'll end this here.I agree I still don't love you.I thought I could get some money if I used this tricks but I guess I failed," I heard her muttering in defeat.

"If you think I was foolish enough to fall for your tricks then you were absolutely wrong.I know you don't have any proof inside that drive," I said and rolled my eyes for the second time when her eyes widened.

"What? H-how?," she managed to ask.

"You don't even have money to pay your house rent,and you want me to believe that you actually hired some detectives for my wife?" I couldn't help myself from mocking her.

"I guess you did a background check on me,didn't you?"

"Fine.I admit my defeat.I won't disturb your wife or you ever again,"she said with a low tone. "Just leave me and my baby alone." She seemed as if she was begging.

"I hope you keep your words,because you can't even realize how bad I can be when I am serious," I warned her and took a step back.

"Know this.I don't hate you," as soon as I said that her head whipped up on my direction.

"But I don't really like you.Even though you did all those stuff with me and tried to hurt my love, I can never forgive you for that, but still I don't hate you,because deep down I feel as if I had been more mature with presenting myself to you then I believe you would've actually liked me back.It seems I failed to impress you and make you see the person I truly was.You saw me spending my money wildly but never saw why I spend it with my friends... because I wanted to have some friends.I never really had any friends from my childhood and it is why I was so keen on spending vigorously if that meant I could've some friends with whom I could share my feelings.You saw how bad of a person I was, but you never really saw how badly hurt I was when you rejected me.My feelings were genuine." I sighed. "Anyway,those things are long gone.Know it, Claudia.I don't ever want to see your face ever again in my life.So don't ever show yourself before me ever again or else god will know what I would end up doing with you.And lastly, stay away from Angel and my family.This is my last warning to you.Keep this in your mind," I said and turned around to leave but stopped when she opened her mouth.

"Did you...I mean, did you ever love me like this? Would you have protected me if I had ever liked you back?" she askedbut with a huff.

I left the place and walked back towards my car. "You are still a fool, Claudia.I could never hurt a little girl.A woman like you can never understand me," I mumbled to myself as I drove back to home.

The clock showed ten in the evening by the time I reached home.I walked directly to the bedroom but surprisingly she wasn't in the room.

Furrowing my eyebrows, I pulled my phone out of m pant pockets wanting to call her.But as soon as I pulled the phone out I heard Danny's voice. "What's wrong with you?"

I made my way towards the door only to collide with Angela herself.

"What's wro—"

Istopped in mid-sentence.She was wearing a red long gown and she was dressed up as if it was the most important day of her life, but it was her eyes that made me worried. They held pain and sadness.

Pushing past me, she walked directly to her wardrobe and pulled some clothes out before running to the bathroom.

"Angela!" Iran after her only to be stopped by the door slamming on my face.

"What's wrong? Were you crying?" I asked but got no reply.

The phone in my hand got my attention. I slid the screen open only to find notifications of missed calls and text messages popping on my screen, all from Angela. Then I read a message which made me feel as if someone had thrown a bucket filled with ice water on me: I'll be waiting for you at La Brasilia Hotel tonight. Suite number 12. Try to make it before six in the evening. I've something to tell you.

Chapter 86

Angela

It was supposed to be the best day of our life. I was happy and contented with the preparations that the hotel workers did for me. I had booked a suite at the best hotel in Chicago for Xavier. It was supposed to be the start of our relationship. I was so excited yet nervous at the same time. I just hoped things to go as I had planned.

The whole day went in a blink with the preparation; choosing an extravagant place, selecting a perfect dress, settling everything and finally as soon as I drove off to the hotel I sent him a text to be on time.

There were times when my breath hitched,

My heart pounded against my chest,

I was completely unaware,

Because I was naive.

My heart suffered the first flutter when I saw you standing at the altar,

Even though you didn't know me; you were still there standing and waiting for me.

You made me cry, you made me smile, you saved me and even made me laugh.

My heart kept on fluttering every time I saw you and yet I was naive;

Not to understand why it reacted the way it did when you were near.

When you were away, I longed for you but when you were near, I ran from you.

I thought I'd end up having a heart-attack if I was near you,

Because it responded too much to you.

I felt safe when I was in your arms but felt uneasy when I was not the one.

Why was it someone else in my place when you've already confessed that you have only me in your space.

I realized I don't like seeing you walking away;

And it is why I've decided I'll let you know how much you mean to me.

The candles flared up and the room lit up,

When I imagined you and me together.

Pouring the wine into a glass, I waited and waited but you never showed up.

A sigh escaped my mouth as I watched the dance trainer teaching the dance steps. Emily was standing next to Lucas as the trainer taught them some steps for their reception party. Danny and Emily decided to hire a dance trainer who would teach them some steps and here we were in the living room with all the couches shifted aside as we practiced for their day.

"That's right. First, we go like this. Right foot to the front and then we turn around and same steps with the left as well. Yeah? Let's go...A one and two ...," the trainer showed them steps and both of them followed them.

"Angel," Xavier whispered standing next to me to get my attention.

He has been like this from the beginning of the morning. He has been trailing me around everywhere I went and has been trying a multiple of times to get me talk to him. As much as I hated to do it I couldn't let myself speak to him. My heart was hurt. It was not because he didn't show up or pick any of my calls but for the fact that he refused to tell where he was.

"Dad, I am not feeling well. I want to take some rest please," I asked as politely as I could avoiding Xavier's penetrating gaze.

"What? What happened to you? You looked fine a few seconds ago," Danny remarked which made me give him a pointed stare.

"Yes. But are you okay? You haven't even started on your own steps," Em remarked and I opened my mouth to speak but was cut off by Xavier.

"Oh no... she is fine. I think she is just tired. I believe we can do this. Isn't it honey?" Xavier said and I raised an eyebrow at him "Right," I muttered nodding at him.

"See?" he laughed nervously looking at my expression and avoided my gaze after that until the trainer called us for our term.

Emily walked towards me but was restrained to her position by Lucas. We all watched as Lucas pulled her closed to him and even though there was no music playing he swirled her around and with a final twirl he let her fall in his arm in a romantic position while the whole of the family looked at them with eyes.

"Bravo!" the trainer applauded and clapped for the couple but they hardly noticed this because they were lost in each other's eyes.

"Bro..."Danny tapped Lucas' shoulder and that finally made them break out of each other's gaze. Lucas helped Em up to her feet while she adjusted her dress and walked up to me with a deep red cheek.

"Wow..." Danny teased Lucas and whistled a little. Clearly embarrassed Lucas rolled his eyes at Danny and adjusting his shirt he walked up to Xavier. Dad chuckled a little and took a sip of his bear while he sat in the corner on the sofa watching everyone sharpen their dance skills.

"Yo-" before I could open my mouth the trainer interrupted us "That was a tremendous performance by our lovely couple. Give them an applaud guys," he remarked and everyone clapped including me. Emily looked even more embarrassed but nonetheless smiled at everyone.

"My brother can dance," Danny teased which earned him a punch on his arm by none other than Lucas himself.

"Now it's your turn," Emily looked excited all of a sudden as she urged me to go to the middle.

"Emil-" it looked like my fate didn't want me to speak up as everytime I opened my mouth someone would always interrupt but this time nobody interrupted me because I was lifted up a little from the ground by my waist and was taken to the middle of the room.

Danny whistled at us which earned him another punch from Lucas.

"Yayyy!" Em clapped her hands and the trainer played the music on a recorder.

Chapter 87

The soft music beats echoed in the room and Xavier made me stand facing him as he took hold of my hand which automatically made me look up at him. As the people in the room encouraged us to dance, not wanting to cause a scene I let him do whatever he wanted to do. As he moved, I mimicked his movements and soon we were swaying rhythmically according to the beats of the music.

With the hand in hands and eye to eyes, we moved in our place and as I took a step back he pulled me closer to him and turned me around wrapping me in his arms.

"This brings back memories," he whispered leaning closer to my ear and certainly enough it did bring back memories of the time when we were practicing for his company's Silver Jubilee. A smile appeared on my face reminiscing the time but then he spoke "Forgive me. I'm sorry, I couldn't make it on time. Please?" his words held sincerity but even though I wanted to forgive him I couldn't understand why my brain went against the decision and I remained silent.

"Angel?" he turned me around and put his hand on my waist.

"Let's talk about it later," I said and took a step forward ready to leave but was once again stopped by him as he pulled me closer to him and hugged me tightly.

"I am sorry," he whispered.

"Xavier," I uttered when everyone present in the room laughed and teased us for they thought we were romancing but that was not exactly the case.

"Angel," he followed me wherever I went.

As I kept the put the clothes into the laundry basket, he took it out and kept in on the washing machine.

"What are you doing?" I asked narrowing my eyes at him.

"You are not talking to me," he smiled and took a step closer to me but I turned around and left the room.

"And where do you think you are going?" he asked as he stood right before me, blocking my way to the exit.

"Xavier, I have work to do...please move," I said and tried to walk past him, but he had some other things in his mind as he took a step closer to me and looked into my eyes. My breath hitched by his

close proximity. I looked down purposely trying to control my breaths, not wanting him to know he affected me.

"Wh-What are you doing?" I asked but cursed in my mind when I stuttered a little.

As if he heard my thoughts he chuckled and that made me look up at him. His eyes had this mischievous glint that made me nervous all of a sudden because I knew him...very well. He would go up to any extent to annoy me and there is no escape to his mischievous tricks. That is why what I want to avoid being caught up from his tricks.

Pursing my lips up I took a side step with the intention of walking past him but again he stood in front of me blocking my way. Avoiding his boyish grin, I clicked my tongue at his behavior and took another side step, but again he mimicked my movement and finally, after two further unsuccessful attempts, I gave up, in the end glaring at him while he grinned.

"Xavier, what do you think you are doing?" I asked and smiled at Lucas, my brother, who walked past my room.

"What am I doing?" he questioned, playing innocent.

"Really?," I huffed at him and tried again but once again he blocked my way and this time he even chuckled at my effort.

"Xavier!" Crossing my arms across my chest and lifting my chin up, I tried my best to give him an annoyed and angry expression, but all he did in return was to shove his hands inside his pant pockets and gave me a shrug.

"I am not even touching you," he said in a taunting manner, giving me a contagious smile.

"But you are blocking my way! Will you please move now?," I asked as politely as I could.

"Oh, am I? I'm so sorry." He shook his head and took a step to his side, giving me a space to walk out of the room. Him letting me pass so easily made me little doubtful of his actions. He stood there smiling at me, but I shrugged the thoughts aside as I took a step forward. A squeal escaped my mouth when he encircled his hands around my torso and swept me up from the ground, pressing me to his body.

"Xavier!" I groaned as I tried to free myself from his grip.

"Angela," he said. I stopped wiggling against him when he leaned closer and whispered into my ear, "In order to know me. . ."He chuckled deeply and a shiver ran down my spine when his warm breath fanned on the side of my cheek."You have a long way to go. " And with that he pecked my cheek and looked back at me, winking as he removed his arm, and with a satisfied grin he walked out of the room.

"What do you think you are doing?" I glared at him as he leaned against me as I washed the dishes in the kitchen.

"You are not talking to me," he pouted and wrapped his arms around my waist and kept his chin on my shoulder.

"Xavier...Please!" for the umpteenth time I glared at him as he continued following me to the lawn.

"What? You're not talking to me..." battling his eyelashes he smiled down at me.

"And what do you want to talk about?" I crossed my arms over my chest and heaved a sigh.

"Look...I told you I'm sorry. I couldn't make it to you yesterday...that's because I was stuck somewhere else. It was important," he sighed as he raked a hand through his hair.

"Important..." I muttered.

"At least you could've let me know that you were not coming. I wouldn't have made a fool out of myself yesterday. I bet everyone thought I was stood up," I air quoted the last two words and huffed at him.

"Angela c'mon. It was really important. You know me...I can't do anything like that to you. I didn't even get the time to read your messages and I was really far away from the place where you invited me. I can never ditch you up...it was god damn important for me. I told you I am sorry and I will make it up to you okay? It was just a dinner... right? Wait... I will just call Ron and I'll book the best place for us tonigh-"

"Just a dinner?" I mumbled cutting him off in the middle.

"Angel..." he huffed and put the phone back in his pocket that he pulled out a few minutes ago.

"What's wrong with you? Why are behaving like this all of a sudden? Do you think it was intentional hu? Do you really think I made you wait some hours intentionall-"

"Ten hours..." I mumbled remembering the day.

I wanted the day to be special for which I made sure the arrangements were perfect. The hotel suite was booked by me and even volunteered to decorate the room. The food, the lighting everything was perfectly set according to my wish. I made an extra effort to get ready for the evening wanting to look beautiful for him. If only I had known that he wouldn't show up...

"Ten hours?" he muttered after me. I looked up at him with tears filled eyes as I remembered the staff members whispering to themselves when I kept on calling him. They were probably either feeling pity for me else making fun of me.

"You know what? Forget it. You are sorry... right? Guess what?" pursing my lips I gave him a small smile but inside I was breaking.

"Like always...I forgive you. It's okay," I said even though my voice was breaking in the last I composed myself and turned around to leave but was stopped when he held my hand and turned me around.

"You... You looked different yesterday. Why would you invite me to a hotel suite and why are you so sad over the fact that I didn't come yesterday even though I keep telling you that I had an important work to do? You were never like this. You can't even forgive me heartily this time...Why," he kept a hand on my cheek as he gazed right into my eyes "are you so sad? What was it that you wanted to tell me yesterday?" he asked probably remembering my text messages.

"It doesn't matter anymore," I croaked out and pushed him back but he held my hand tightly as I looked up at him. His eyes glistened and he looked here and there as if realizing something.

"Why would she wait ten hours for me?" I heard him questioning to himself.

"Is it... Is it possible that what I'm thinking right now is what you wanted to tell me yesterday?" he breathed out to which I just tittered in reply.

As if realization hit him his eyes widened and his drenched eyes told me that he understood it finally.

"Angela..." pulling me into a hug he buried my head into his chest as he swayed us in our position laughing softly to himself.

"Oh Angela..." he breathed out.

"Please..." he held me by my arms and with a big smile on his face looked at me with hope filled in his eyes.

"Let me hear it now," he begged.

"Please let me know that whatever I'm thinking right now is true. Please?,"

The scowl that he had a few seconds ago was gone and his face lit up. He looked happy. Never had I ever seen him so happy but as happy he grew...the more depressed I felt. My heart ached because I was not in a position to give me what he wanted. Probably, it lacked confidence. The confidence that I had managed to build up yesterday for confessing him was gone. I just couldn't build up the courage to tell him those words.

"Emily...is waiting for me," I pulled myself out of his grip and took a step back. Immediately sadness marred his face and he looked down at me with confusion.

"I've to go," I said and turned around.

"I know that I hurt you. But believe me...if I had known about it then I would have done everything possible to be present right before your eyes yesterday. Between us.. I am the one who wants to hear it badly. But it's okay..." he continued as I kept on walking towards my car but slowly wanting to hear whatever he was saying.

"I am the one who caused all this. I miffed my wife and I'll be the one to sort everything between us. Two days...," he yelled on my back as I opened the car door and got into the driver seat.

"Within two days I'll make you say it to right on my face. That's my promise baby..." he laughed and my head shot towards his direction.

"You know I love you right? Then have trust in me and my promise. I will and definitely will make you say it to me right on my face. I love you, Angel," squinting my eyes at him I shook my head and put the key in the ignition.

"Go back home," I rolled my eyes at him when he began to throw flying kisses in my direction.

"I love yo.." I drove off to the driveway.

But as I drove a smile remained plastered on my face. No matter how much I tried I could never stay miffed with him for very long. And interestingly I wanted him to at least try win me back. I wanted to know what he could do for me that would make me forget everything and confess him that I love him.

"Oh Xavier..." I smiled to myself.

Chapter 88

You can't expect to hit the jackpot if you don't put a few nickels in the machine.

-Flip Wilson

Angela Pov

"He said two days?" Em said with amusement clear in her eyes.

"Hmm, I don't really have any idea what is going on in his mind," I said as I munched on my food and watched the movie that was laying on her laptop.

"Make a guess. What do you think he would do?" she asked and that made me think about it.

"Let's see…If I were him, I would've…" I thought for a while but nothing struck my mind which resulted me in heaving a sigh.

"I don't really know. He is unpredictable. Everything he does is always so …"I tried to explain her by making circles using my hands in the air but I couldn't quite put my finger on that perfect word and ended up saying "Extravagant,"

"What?" she tittered.

"Yeah!"

"Okay then let me make a guess," she put her hand on her chin and thought for a while before continuing "How about this…would he do the same thing that you tried to do for him?" she asked and I shook my head no.

"That honeymoon suite idea itself was inspired by his idea," I muttered and looked down at my food.

"What idea?" she looked enthusiastic all of a sudden.

"He proposed me and confessed me in a very romantic place where he did all the arrangements by himself. That inspired me and I chose the honeymoon suite for mine idea," I told her and kept the empty bowl aside.

"Oh tell me more about it," she asked eagerly.

"I don't want to," I replied curtly and plopped on the bed rolling on my stomach.

"Why not?" she groaned like a kid and sat near the bed on a chair and kept her legs on the bed.

"It's not really important right now. I just hope whatever he does…"I stopped in the middle thinking about it.

"What is it?" she asked looking curious.

"Nothing!" I replied and got up from the bed.

"Turns out you have only three days left to enjoy your spinster life," intentionally changing the subject I looked at her and smirked when she looked down and bit her under lips.

"Yeah and I'm pretty nervous," she mumbled and that's when her phone rang.

"Hello?" she picked her phone and I stood in the corner of the room leaning against the door and waited for her to finish her call.

"What? Tomorrow?" she asked and that made me raise an eyebrow at her.

"What is it?" I asked after she hung up the call.

"It was Lucas…" she said and looked at her phone. I couldn't quite read her facial expression as she looked at phone void of emotions …it was getting harder for me to understand whether she was happy or sad.

"Is everything alright?" I asked slowly and watched as she curled her fingers on the phone tightly and stood up in her place with a flaring nostrils.

"He said they are going to have a bachelorette party tomorrow," she said through gritted teeth and her behaviour made me shift on my place feeling awkward.

What's wrong with her?

"Ohkay…So?" I put more stress on the latter word.

"What do you mean by so? I want a party too!" she lunged towards me and held my arms and shook me on my place.

"Em…Em..Em,"

Her eyes held this determined look which told me that she was not going to listen whatever I told her and since I had no wish to have an argument with over this and it was her wedding I decided we should have a hen party. I smiled at her awkwardly and nodded showing a thumb up. She grinned at me and the next moment sat on top of her study table dialling her friend's number inviting and discussing about the party with them.

Since I had no interest in that party and all the while Xavier had all my attention I sat back on the bed and watched the movie silently still thinking about what he was planning do to win my forgiveness.

"White…" a voice made me jerk out of my thinking state.

"Pardon?" I asked blinking several times at an excited looking Em.

"The theme is white," she chirped and clapped her hands like a kid before jumping off the table and running to her closet probably searching for a dress.

"I don't have a good white dress," she poked her head out from her walk-in-closet and smiled goofily at me.

"Then?" I asked.

"Shopping time…" she sang and I laughed at her excited self. I had never seen her like this. Is this what love turns a human? She used to be so serious at times, calm but not at all chatty. Nothing hiked her interests nor did she ever get excited over going to clubs or pubs but since her engagement she has changed. She seems more open and she gets excited over little things.

I am really happy for you Em… I'm glad that you are going to be my sister-in-law. My brother is really lucky to have you as his partner. You've always looked after me whenever I needed you the most and I'm sure that you'd look after my brother and cherish him until the very end.

Chapter 89

It was already half past seven in the evening when I came back. Emily made sure buy a white outfit and even made me buy one even though I had so many white dresses inside my wardrobe. She was being persistent and overwhelmed by her excitement I bought one but only for her sake.

Holding the bag I walked in and heard everyone chatting and cheering watching a football match.

"What's up sis?" Danny asked as I walked past the living room.

"Nothing much," I smiled at him and made my way back towards my room. But as I entered the room was unlikely dark. I wondered who switched off the light but as I reached for the switch a hand clamped my mouth and a person held me by waist as he picked me from the ground. I squealed and the bag fell from my hand but I took the moment to thrash and struggle against the person.

"Ssh! Ssh!" the person tried to hush me and then it hit me as my body recognised the person who was holding me.

Xavier

His hand was still on my mouth preventing me to speak. But then the room was completely dark and I couldn't even see his face and I reached for the switch to switch on the lights but with his other hand he got hold of my hand and stopped me from switching on the lights.

"What are doing?" I asked but my voice came out muffled for he was still clamping my mouth but I was sure that he understood.

The next second he lit a lighter before my face and I looked at him and narrowed my eyes at him when he showed me his boyish grin.

Remember Angela…You're angry upon him.

Even though I found myself already forgiving him for not showing still I decided upon wanting to see how far is his limit to woo me and tolerate my miffed attitude.

"I was waiting for you the whole day and you show up this late. Where were you…baby?" he wiggled his eyebrows and put stress on the last word which made me huff at him.

"Let go!" my words came out muffled but thankfully this time he let go of me and being grateful I exhaled out air that I didn't even realised I was holding in before glaring at him.

"Do you want me to end up in a hospital bed Xavier? What is all this?" I asked as I pushed him on his chest.

"Nope. But I want you to end up in my arms," and before I could ask him what he meant he scooped me up in his arms in one motion without any difficulties and switched the lights on of the room. My eyes squinted shut on its own because of the brightness.

"Wh-What are you doing? Put me down!"

"Sure!" and the next moment I was thrown on my bed and I landed on my back as I groaned and looked at him flabbergasted by his actions.

"What is wrong with you?" I breathed out and tried to get up but he crawled on top of me and pinned my hands down.

"Ow! Xavier…" struggling against him I tried my best to move him from top of him but he had something else going inside his head as he continued pinning me down but said nothing and finally I calmed down not by intentionally but by forcefully. He calmed me down forcefully as he left no other choice for me but to calm down a little.

"So this is what you were planning?" I asked and stared into his eyes while he gazed down at me still not uttering a single word.

"Xavier?"

"Xavier?"

"XAVIER!" and finally he was out of his own staring contest and shook his head before staring back at me.

"Angel…" all of sudden his eyes held sadness and he got from top of me and sat next to me on the bed. Huffing out air, I pulled myself up and sat next to him and looked his way. He looked depressed and sad all of sudden that it confused me and I wanted to know the reason for witnessing all this emotions on his face.

"What is it Xavier? Is everything alright?" keeping a hand o his shoulder I turned him around just to face me.

"I am sorry. I truly am. If I had known that you wanted to see me…never would I've ever gone to that place," he breathed out and that made me bite on my lips.

"Where were you?" finally I mustered up the courage to ask him the question that was nagging me from the beginning. I wanted to know here he was and what was that important work that made him ditch me.

"I want to tell you everything but then it would mean I'm dragging you into all this and I don't want to stress you," as he confessed, his words confused me even further.

Wait! So is it related to me?

"What do you want to tell me Xavier?" I asked urging him to tell me.

He stared into my eyes and I understood that he was fighting internally with himself whether to tell me or not.

"It's okay…you can tell me," I assured him and held his hand intertwining our fingers as I slid next to him and leaned against him resting my head on his shoulder. He sat there silently playing with my finger and rubbing the back of my hand with his thumb probably lost in his thoughts. Nevertheless, I understood and stayed silent giving him some space. But then when I was about to open my mouth he spoke up "I went to meet Claudia,"

As soon as I heard that, my fingers voluntarily clasped tightly around his hand. All of a sudden I felt a strange emotion, possessiveness for Xavier but then I was disappointed that he stood me up for that woman. Come to think of it I made this decision to come back to Chicago as an excuse to help Em in her wedding all because of her. I admit seeing her with Xavier that day made me jealous and until now I was unaware of my own feelings.

"Why?" I managed to ask.

"Angela..." all of a sudden he withdraw his hand back from me and wrapped it around my torso before pushing both us back on the bed. An oomph formed in my mouth due to the sudden movement and he wrapped his arm around my torso. His breath fanning on the crook of my neck made me shiver but then he spoke: "I read the threatening text messages on your phone,"

"What? Really?" I asked and tried to look at him and hummed in response.

"I did a background check on the number and found the owner of the number none other than Claudia herself," he said and that made me clutch his arms tightly but I was unaware of the fact that my nails were hurting him.

"Why would she do that? I mean... I thought she had a kid now," I mumbled to myself but he heard it all.

"She is all bankrupt. With Daniel leaving her with the kid she is left with nothing and failed to earn money all by herself because I remember her dropping out of the university depending upon Daniel. But then when she was struggling to meet her end she saw our wedding journal in the newspaper and thought of a plan to pull some money out like she did back then with me...but this time it was you who were her target," he said and I could feel his sadness as he talked about her.

No doubt the woman was the actual reason why he loathed me in the beginning and treated me the way.

"I love you Angela. I sincerely do but now I think I respect you more than I love you. Don't get it wrong but it was only because of you my life is back on the tracks or else I would've end up in the roads if it weren't you. Because of you I was able to trust people and it was only because of you I received success on many stages of my life. It is why I'm grateful to my dad as he chose you. Although I still don't have any idea how in the world he met you but I'm grateful to the heavens that they let my dad meet you," as he said that the corner of my eyes sting and I turned my head to the other side.

"I thought I was a burden on you," I mumbled with teary eyes but as he heard me he climbed up and from my chin turned my head towards him.

"No, you are not!" he said with determination and I believed him instantly.

Chapter 90

"In fact after I fell in love with you, and when you didn't reciprocate my feelings I thought I was the one who was burdening you with my emotions and hence I tried to give you some space to think about me. You don't really think that I bought your plan to come here just because you wanted to help in this wedding did you?" he chuckled and I was sure my eyes were like the size of a saucer as I stared at him in shock.

How did he?

"You still have a long way to go Angela," he grinned at me and place a kiss on my temple.

"Oh yeah?" composing myself I glared at him and pushed him off me but then he wrapped his arms tighter around me and all he did was grin at my unsuccessful efforts of trying to free myself.

"If you knew and you let me leave then why did show up here?"

"Well, because I have a big heart," he said and that made me stop struggling.

"What?" I asked with bewilderment.

"Yeah!' he nodded his head "I have a big heart and was generous enough to give you some space to think about me but then when you were gone I was bored to death. I mean my soft cuddly living Koala was gone and I couldn't sleep peacefully in nights so finally I decided to come here," as he said that I was a strange emotion that I had never felt before in my life.

An uneasy feeling with told me to kill him.

"Ko-Koala? I look like a Koala to you?" I asked and the next moment thrashed against him trying to remove him off him. How dare he?

"Get off me! Get of me! I swear I'll kill you today Xavier! Just get off me," I yelled on top of my lungs but then stopped when I heard the volume of the Tv with the game playing on it increasing as I yelled.

Oh no!

"I guess they took it in a wrong way," Xavier chuckled looking towards the door and I felt as my cheeks heat up due to embarrassment.

"Get off me Xavier," this time I said it in a whisper and much to his amusement and to my annoyance he got on top of me and sat on the lower half of my body but made sure not to put his

body weight on me as he held himself up using his legs. H positioned himself such that to restrain me from moving.

"What are you doing? The door is open what if somebody walks in!" surpassing a laugh he looked down at me and then spoke: "I am with my wife who would ever dare to question me about anything I do inside this room?" he wigged his eyebrows and even though I wanted to reply with a smartass comment about it I chose to stay quiet because then he would start being the cocky self only to annoy me.

"But anyways. I went to meet her and I made it clear to her to stop coming after you and me. She was stalking you Angela and somehow she was aware of the fact that you nodded to this wedding only because you wanted money. Eve-" he cut me off before I could intervene him "nthough we only know the reason why you did that!"

"She won't ever come after you, I made sure of it and you don't have to worry about me having feelings for her. Get over that!" all of a sudden he narrowed his eyes down at him and became serious.

"Wh-what are you talking about? I don't worry for such a thi-" he cut me off when he raised his arm up with my nails digging into his skin.

"Oh my!" I removed my hand and inspected his arm.

"I am sorry,"

"For what? For hurting me or for questioning and doubting on my feelings for you?" his words were like accusation to me. But I couldn't find myself to get a proper excuse for that and felt remorseful.

"Loo-"

"But you know what? I'm truly happy!" and the cheery self was back as he grinned his boyish grin and looked down at me with happiness filled in his eyes.

"I know that you were jealous and you didn't like seeing me with her," I rolled my eyes at him and crossed my arms over my chest huffing at him.

"I wasn't jealous," I said in a duh tone.

"Of course you were not!" he said and placing both of his hands on my either side bend down on me. His nose touching my forehead as she spoke "Now when you know the reason, can you not forgive me?" he asked but his voice was anything but neutral. At the end he placed his lips on my temple and spoke seductively "I know you want me as much as I want you,"

"X-Xavier?" placing my hands on his forearm I tried my best to remain unaffected by his assaults but it didn't work.

Before I know it, he was already placing soft wet kisses on the side of my face and down to my neck. My breath hitched when he got my sweet spot and as if he knew that he sucked on the spot trying to gain a moan from me but in the end he succeeded and I felt my face heating up as blood rushed to my face.

"Want to hear my plan?" he whispered seductively near my ear before biting my earlobe.

"I plan on forcing the words out of your pretty face," he chuckled and as he looked up at me, he held this coquettish grin which made me believe that he was being serious with it and that made me gulp.

"Ugh! Get off!" with a push he was off me and he laid down next to me with his arms under his head as he stared at me with a smirk plastered on his face.

"In your dreams Mr. Xavier Knights!" I huffed at him and got off from the bed and took the shopping bag to the wardrobe.

"We will see Mrs. Angela Knights," I heard him while I unpacked the bag and kept the dress in the wardrobe.

And we will see that too Xavier. You also wait and watch. You can't force anything out of me like every time. This time I'm the one who is going to get what I want. I will not let you win every time and do whatever you want. You need to understand my place in your life.

I smirked back at him and that made him raise an eyebrow.

"What the fuck is this Dusty boy doing here Angela?" he yelled pointing an accusing finger at me to which I raised my hands in the air in surrender.

"Take a chill pill Mr. Knights. I have invited him. It's my brother's wedding after all and he is my frie-"

"Friend my ass!" he stomped out of the room while I bit the inner side of my mouth trying to control my laughter. I knew he disliked Dustin from the beginning.

"It's all because you called me a Koala Mr. Knights," I laughed at the thought.

Chapter 91

"Heart-attack," he held his chest as he crunched down on the floor with a pained expression.

"Xavier…" crossing my arms over my chest I gave him a bored expression and rolled my eyes when he gasped for air.

"It's a heart attack. Please! Please tell my heart what it wants to hear for the last time,"

"Xavier, stop it already," I pleaded as I took hold of his arms and made him stand up.

"But I'm having a heart attack!" he withdrew his hand from him and once again continued his act.

"Then remain having a heart attack," I threw the wet towel on the bed and went to the dressing table to dry my wet hair. Xavier was serious when he said he would force it out of my words and by that he has been trying countless times since the morning to get it from my mouth.

He pushed both Dustin and me away from each other when I was helping him with a dance step.

He was like "She is not your dance teacher. The dancer teacher is there…" he said pointing towards the trainer.

"I love you Angel," he said as I was blow drying my hair. He wrapped his hands around my waist and kept his chin on my shoulder.

"How many times are you going to say that?" I chuckled remembering it was almost twentieth time he was saying that to me since the morning.

"Until and unless you reciprocate it to me," I watched him throw the mirror and smiled at him.

"You all are having Lucas bachelorette party today?" I asked as I kept the dryer back and turned around to find him sitting on the bed.

"Hmmm," he replied as I walked towards bed and took the towel.

"Angel?"

"Hm?" a gasp formed out of my mouth when he pulled me to him and made me sit on his lap.

"Xavier?" I looked into his eyes and held him by his shoulder. I was sure my heart was thumping loudly and our close proximity made me feel shy. I smiled at him and tried to get up but he held me by my waist and made me look at him by my chin.

"How long? How long do you plan on torturing me?" he questioned with a whisper at the end. His gaze fell on my lips and before I knew it he gave a peck o my lips catching me off guard. A small

smile played on his lips as he stared at me and frozen at my spot I blink at him several times before throwing the towel on the ground and wrapping my arms round his neck.

Pulling him closer I closed my eyes and placed my lips on his and clasped my hand on either side of his head, kissing him slowly and softly. But ended it as quickly as I could and looked back at his eyes. He looked surprised by my act.

Do you get it now Xavier?

How much I love you?

Even though I asked the question in my head, it looked as if he got it because he pulled me impossibly closer before planting his lips on mine. He kissed me and the world seemed to fell off around me. It was slow and soft but soon turned into a passionate one. His hand rested just below my ear, his thumb caressing my cheek. I kissed him with the same intensity and leaned on to him feeling comfortable.

In the end, both of us pulled away gasping for air and resting my forehead on his, I smiled a little when my eyes fell on his swollen one.

"That was the best kiss of my life," I heard him mutter before he got hold of my hand and placed a kiss on it.

"Bachelorette party?" both Lucas and Xavier asked as I took the bag and walked towards the door.

"Yeah. You are not the only one who is getting married," I rolled my eyes at Lucas when he scoffed at me.

"Where are you having the party? Tell me." This time it was Xavier who got hold of the bag in which I had my white dress and tried to pull it away from me.

"Relax Xavier! You are also joining Lucas' party. So why not just chill in our own atmosphere?" I said as I pulled it back.

"Are you going to a clu-?" he asked and I shook my head no when I saw rage climbing up his face. I smiled at it and flicked him on his forehead. He winced and narrowed his eyes at me. It's funny how I used to cower away beforehand whenever he had that same expression but now as I love him it looks anything but scary to me. Loving him has made me confident enough to face him.

As we both were forced into this marriage deal, none of us actually had the confidence that we would actually stand this long but as time flew by and I began to know him better, I got to know that marriage actually means standing up 'to' and 'with' each other. And Xavier is a kind of person who needs a person who stand up with him at every possible time of his life.

"Relax! Relax. No, we are not going to any club just to Em's friend house," I told him and he looked relieved when he heard that.

"At least tell me the location. I'll pick you up," he offered but I shook my head no.

"Emily said I can spend the night over her place," I answered and put my shoes on.

"But I-"

"Xavier…" I sighed as I looked at him and smiled when he stopped in the middle and stared at me.

"Fine," he muttered and pulled my head to him and placed a kiss on my forehead before letting me go. I smiled at him and picking my bags up I walked out of the house and towards the car to Em's house.

"Oh my god you look so beautiful," Dustin looked dreamily at me when Em was done putting make up on me.

"And I thought it's my wedding…" I heard Em and looked up at her.

"Well…who told you to make me so beautiful with your makeup skills?" I asked as I stood up from the chair and looked into the mirror. I was wearing a strappy white sheath dress which ended right above my knee. The dress had lacey hem and I pulled the dress down feeling conscious.

"I can"t help it. Your face is just umm irresistibly gorgeous. I tried my best not make you look this gorgeous though…" she rolled the makeup brush between her finger and looked up.

"Oh c'mon," I punched her on her arm and that made her giggle.

"C'mon let's go now…" Dustin sang and picking up his car keys he ran out of the house without us.

"Why did you ask him to join us? He looks more excited than us," I chuckled at his behaviour.

"Well…he invited himself on his own. When I told him about our party this morning he kind of looked starey eyes and lunged at me practically begging me to let him be with us. I told him to join Lucas' party but he was keen. He said he had no interest upon their kind of party," Em said as I locked her home and both of us walked towards the car.

"He is gay right?" she asked and I nodded at her.

"What is this going on?" my voice trembled at the end when I looked at the strippers stripping off their clothes from their body swaying seductively while Em's friends and even Dustin looked excited throwing notes on them.

"I do-don't know," I heard Em's trembling voice and looked at her.

Chapter 92

Apparently, Dustin and Em's friend thought it was a good idea to call strippers at the last moment because they felt bored and that is how they ended up calling the strippers without our consents.

"I want to go back home now," she said and I took few steps back when one of the stripper made his way towards Em.

"For the bride," he tore his shirt off his body giving both of us a heart attack. We screamed in shock and Em pushed me before her not wanting to look at the show. The music played loudly in the room and I got hold of her arm trying to move her before me.

"And here is for this gorgeous lady," another stripper came out of nowhere before me and tore his shirt showing me his six pack abs as he swayed seductively and moved closer to us. My eyes fell on the third and the last one who had his pants off him as he grinded against one of the girl with Dustin filming in a camera.

The stripper got hold of my arms and turned me around pressing himself on my back. I could feel his crotch on my butt and that made me yelp in surprise. The other one took hold of Emily's hand and made her strip his pants off him. Emily had a dredful expression as she stared at me but then she had a shock expression and I realised why she had that directed towards me.

The stripper behind was moving his up and down on my torso before moving up and before I knew it his hands were on my boobs and before I could scream I felt his hands gone from my body.

"Fucker!" the girls screamed and I looked back to find the stripper down on the ground holding his cheek.

I looked up to find none other than Xavier himself as he lunged forward and grabbed him by his shoulder before throwing punches on his face.

"Oh my god1 Xavier…"

Not only Xavier but Lucas was also present with throwing punches on the one who was teasing Emily.

"Xavier stop!" I tried to stop him and got hold of his hands stopping him from beating the stripper.

"How fucking dare you?" he was now seething in anger as he raised his hand to punch the already frightened stripper but thankfully he stopped when I held him from his back and pulled him up with me. His hands automatically encircled around mine as he glared down at the stripper.

"Who fucking invited them?" his rage filled voice boomed in the against the music and I watched as the girl who actually invited them hiding behind the third stripper.

"Lucas stop! Stop!" I heard Em's frightened voice and looked her way to find Lucas beating the stripper senseless.

"Luc-" I tried to stop him but was picked up by Xavier as he put me on his shoulder and walked out of the place with me hanging upside down on his shoulder.

"Put me down Xavier!"

Throw my dangling position I watched as he made his way out of the house and finally put me down near his car.

"What in the world are you doing here?" I asked as I held my spinning head and adjusted the dress before looking at him.

"You… I can't believe this," he huffed at me as he crossed his arms around his chest and narrowed his eyes at me.

"You were having fun with that stripper?" he questioned in an accusing tone which made me gasp at him.

"Of course not Xavier. What are you even saying? I didn't even have any idea how they showed up!" I threw my arms in the air and huffed back at him scowling at his accusation.

"Of course! I called them…" sarcasm clear in his voice.

"And how did get here?" I asked remembering the fact that I never really told him the place where I was going.

"Apparently I came here because I saw that Dusty boy posting pictures of the" he air quoted the word "Bachelorette party" before furrowing his eyebrows and squinting his eyes at me "in the social media."

"If I had known you were inviting him and as well as the strippers… I wouldn't have allowed you in the first place," he kept his point and this time I was the one who squinted my eyes at him.

"Look! First thing… I didn't call him but he invited himself of his own. Second thing… I didn't call nor had any idea about the strippers and third… stop putting allegations on me. You sound like my mom now," I air quoted the word 'mom' and glared at him.

"You allowed him to touch you," he gritted out.

"No, I didn't!" I retorted.

"So he forced himself on you? That punk!" he took a menacing step towards the house but I stopped him by getting in front of him stopping him.

"Stop! It was really wrong of you to hit him. They all are only doing their job. Try to understand," I tried to make him understand but to no avail he put effort to at least listen to my pleas as he tried to move me out of his way.

"But he touched my woman,"

"Fine! Fine!" taking in deep breaths I withdrew my hands from him and surrendered it in the air.

"Let's end this here. I don't want to fight with you right now. Forgive me okay? I should've known that it was coming. My mistake. Let's go somewhere," I tried my best to avert his mind but he had his mindset.

"We are going back home!" he got hold of my arm and pulled me with him towards the car.

"Wait! What about Lucas and Em?" I asked as I looked back towards the house.

"He came here with his own car. In fact he reached here faster than me because…"he opened the passenger seat door for me and made me get in "He knew the place and I didn't. Thanks to someone…" he raised his eyebrows at me and put my seat belt on me.

"Um Xavier?" I spoke up for the first time as he drove us back home.

"Xavier?" I sing song when he didn't respond. One of his hand on the gear while the other one on the steering wheel. He had an unreadable expression on his face as he drove us silently.

"Come to look at it, your two days is going to be in…" I read the time from the car's dashboard "in thirty minutes. It looks like you failed this time…" I had a smug expression on my face.

"Don't you want to hear it?" I asked pressuring him when he didn't respond.

He heaved a sigh and looked at me for a moment before looking back at the road.

"No, I don't want to hear it," he said and I gave him a confused look.

"What?" I heard myself muttering.

"It seems you don't really have any feelings for me and after today's incident I have decided," exhaling out he kept both of his hands on the wheel while I sat on the edge of the seat enthusiastically wanting to know about his sudden change in decision.

"You have decided…?" I urged him to continue.

"I have decided that we should file for a divorce" he said casually and as if it meant nothing to him honked at the vehicles looking anything but remorse for the words that he used.

"What?" I asked feeling as if the world fell before me. Shocked to the core, I felt the nervousness and anxiety gliding up my body. It felt as if someone threw a bucket filled with ice water on me.

"What are yo- you saying?" I asked and found my voice coming as a whisper in the end.

"Hmm. I have done a lot of thinking on it and I have decided we should go for the divorce. Look Angela I know this is hard for you but I'll find a way to keep this before our parents okay? You don't need to worry about my dad and yours. I'll handle them. I'll just make an excuse before them that I had an affair and you found out. Yes, this is a good excuse to get a div-"

"Xavier! Are you out of your mind? Do you even know what you're saying?" I held his hand and shook it desperately. The corners of my eyes stinging.

"Yes, like always I'm thinking about you. Look, if I do this than no one will accuse you o anything and you can walk out of this loveless marriage for good. I've realised just because I love you…I can't keep you to myself forcefully and come to think of it you too had to go through so many things in your life. Starting from forced into this marriage to suffering my temperaments and what not. It hurts me to see the one that I love suffering so mu-"

"Stop the car!"

"What?"

"I said stop the damn car," I said as I looked out of the window. He pulled up in the deserted road and before he knew it I was out of the car slamming the door shut angrily.

"Angel-"

"What are you doing? Get in!" he was already before me on the road trying to put me back inside the car.

"I won't!" I pulled my hands out of his grip and turned around when tears trickled down my face and sorrowfully I wiped them off my face using the back of my hand.

"Angela," he turned me around back to face him. It was a chilly night. Few vehicles went past our car and I looked up towards the sky trying to hide my emotions. The moon shone brightly above us but then the even if it looked peaceful it was anything but peaceful to me as the silence of the night made me hear everything that came out of his mouth clearly.

"I know this is going to be a tough decision for both us but I- I can't see you like this anymore. I feel at some point you must be feeling suffocated. Hence, I have decide-"

"Who are to decide everything of your own?" finally I snapped as I got hold of his collar and pulled him closer and looked straight into his eyes.

"Why are you the only one who gets to choose every time?" I snapped feeling the tears rolling down my face. Furious by him I shoved him backward. The car's light falling on him and I looked at him feeling rage boiling up inside me.

"You are the person in this in this world who has the power to make me like this. Look at me! Just look at me what you have made me," I cried yelling at him and gestured him to look at me.

"Whenever I think of doing something you go for the opposite. Why are you always like this? And who gave you the permission to rule my life? And what sufferings? Sufferings! Sufferings! Sufferings! What do you know about sufferings? Do you really think the time when I was forced into this marriage, the time when you treated me so badly, the time where I was humiliated before everyone, the time where had that plane crash, the time when I was nearly raped is equal to the pain that I am feeling right now? Do you? Do you think like that Mr. Xavier Knights?" angrily I shoved him hard on his chest catching him off guard.

"Angela…" he took hold of my hand and placed a hand just below my ear, caressing my cheek with his thumb he spoke up "I understand how you might be feeling right now. But I really think you just need some space from me and look that's why I have already brought the divorce paper," he went back to the car and took something out before coming back to me "Here, it's the divorce paper. I had already applied for it and I've already signed it. Just your sign is left to en-" a slap was heard on the deserted road.

Chapter 93

Lights fell on Xavier's turned face as vehicles rode past us. I had a stinging sensation on my palm due to the force which I applied to slap him. His eyes were wide probably in shock while mine mirrored his expression and the rage that boiled inside me few seconds ago diminished as I lowered my hand down with my eyes stuck on the paper that he was holding.

"You…just why did you have to turn like this just when I was about confess my feelings to you?" I voice of void of an emotions.

"Just when I started to like you, you had to be like this," I muttered and felt his hands on my arm.

"Look. Angela you don't have to lie to me anymore you can be free no-" he whispered softly but I pushed him back and glared at him.

"Lie? Do you think I am mad? I am lying to you standing in the middle of this deserted road? I said I like you hell I fell in love with you long before you could ever imagine. I fell in love with you the first time I saw you standing at the altar. Do you understand? And I believe it was why I started dreaming to have a beautiful life with a stranger like you but then my hopes were crushed mercilessly when you treated me like some garbage. You hated me and that made me weary of my own feelings. But then you had to change and when I had decided to stay away from you…you barged into my life forcefully and made me love you even more. Why did you do that if we…we" I snatched the paper from him and shoved it on his chest "we were to end up like this? Why did you waste your time and efforts making me fall for you when you had to walk out of my life. Fine! Get out! I have had enough now!" I broke down before him and fell on my knees on the ground sobbing and weeping.

"Angela!" he tried to touch me but I pryed my hands away from him.

"Don't touch me!" I snapped at him.

While I sat down on the ground sobbing and cursing my life for treating me the way, he crunched down before me and stared at me while I sobbed.

"Having fun watching me break down?" I muttered but audible enough to hear it.

"Not really!" he said and as I looked back at him he had a blissful expression on his face.

With his finger under my chin he made me look at him and then curling the few strands of hair behind my ear he spoke up "You look like a mess," he commented which made me scoff at him.

"A beautiful mess indeed," he completed.

"I believe you are educated enough to read the papers that you are holding," he said and I tossed the paper at him.

"I don't want to read it. Give it to me tomorrow. I'll sign on it tomorrow…for sure" I said as I felt tears threatening to fall off my eyes hence, diverting my head to the other direction I let it fall off.

"Really?" I heard him chuckle.

"C'mon read it for me," he said as he kept the paper back on my lap.

"Do you not get it? I don't want to read it no-"

"Wait!" I stopped in the middle when my eyes fell on the papers.

"It's not a divorce paper," I said as I hurriedly picked it up and read it only to find that it was not a divorce paper but an agreement paper. Agreement of a property.

"What is this Xavier?" I asked looking hell as confused only to find him looking at his wrist watch.

"And my two days time is over. I won. I told you …I get.." he looked at me with a smug expression "what I want,"

My mouth were wide open in shock and as my mind registered what he just said I realised I was tricked and he played me like a pro and tricked me into confession.

"So…So we are not going for a divorce?" I asked little feeling little doubtful watching his sardonic wit.

"Of course not! You know me very well Angel. Between us… I would be the last person to even think about getting a divorce hell even thinking of living separately." As his words registered in my mind for the umpteenth time I broke down. I broke down before him sobbing like a child and choked up on my own breath before slapping him on his chest when he reached his hands forward to touch my face "Don't touch me. You are so mean. God! You are so mean,"

"I'm so sorry Angela but lately you have been acting so stubbornly. It was the only reason why I chose this way. Forgive me," he said and pulled me into a hug.

"Wait! So wha-what if I didn't confess it today? What would you have done?" I asked as I hiccupped a little.

"Then I guess…I would've actually filed for a di-"

"I'll slap you so hard that you will forget your own name Mr. Xavier Knights," I threatened but surprisingly it made him chuckle.

"Kidding! I would've tried harder. I'm not from the one to back out" he kissed my temple and pulled me up.

"So… you fell in love with at the first sight? So, it was a love at first sight for you? I knew it. No wonder women swoon over me. I believe I have a god gifted looks n-"

"Shut up!" I screamed clasping my hands on my ear.

Why did I confess that part to him?

Now he would never stop teasing me about it!

"And do you think I should try in Hollywoods? I bet you don't have any doubt about my acting skills after this performance?" prying my hands away from my ear he forced me to listen to his stupid jokes.

"Oh just shut up!" I laughed as I pulled the door open and got in closing it after me.

"You can't ignore me now! We have our whole life to talk about this. I am not going to let you get the hooks so easily. You have kept me waited for so long and have tortured me a lot. It my turn now. You just wait and watch," he said as clasped his seatbelts on and drove off.

I looked out of the window. I felt as if a huge burden fell off my shoulder. After confessing him I felt light and refreshed.

"The great almighty Angela Knights fell in love with her husband the handsome and witty Xavier Knights just before the wedding. What can I say?" he tittered talking to himself "I'm irresistible," his proud compliments made me chuckle at him and before I knew it I found my hand on his thigh.

He stopped talking immediately and sat stiffly in seat.

"I-" leaning closer to him I whispered into his ear "I don't want to go home today. There is an amazing place that I know is nearby. Should we-" I placed my other hand on his chest roaming it all over feeling his body under my hand, liking what I was feeling unless he got hold of my hand and squeezed it before holding it firmly.

"Or better we should go to our own house, here in Chicago," he said and I looked at him with confusion.

He looked at me and with his eyes gestured towards the paper in my lap.

"Oh!" I said and leaned closer to him keeping my head on his shoulder.

"Finally," I heard him muttering exhaling out a deep breath.

Chapter 94

"Xavier! It's enough will you go now?" I said for the umpteenth time.

Xavier has a project to deal with in Europe and he needs to go there for a month. It's a big project and he will be away from home for a month. But he doesn't want to go. Every time he leaves the house for a long period, memories of John flashes back in his mind and he cancels his meetings. But this time I won't let that happen.

He needs to move on. That was a past. Must I say, a very bad past. But it doesn't mean that it will happen Every time he leaves.

I packed his luggage while he is scowling and unpacking his luggage at same time behaving like a kid.

"Xavier!" I snapped making him to glare at me.

"Now don't glare at me like that. You know it won't work" I stated keeping my hands on my hip.

"I am not going anywhere" he stated and began to unbutton his suite.

"Xavier you are going and its final" I stated leaving no room for a no.

If he is stubborn, I'm adamant.

"Don't you understand? It will take a month. I cannot stay away from home, from you this long" he stated and sat on the bed while I packed his luggage and kept the bag near the bed.

"Listen Xavier" I said as I went to him and knelt down before him holding his face in my hands.

"You need to move on. That was a past and it's not going to happen again. Okay? So you need to move on. This project is very important for your company. For our company and even for us" I said and tried to reason as much as I could.

"And don't worry about me. My family is here Xavier. Nothing will happen to me. Okay?" I asked and he closed his eyes.

"Fine!" He muttered and I beamed at him.

"But if anything happens I'm going to fly back here right at that instant leaving that project. So you get me?" He asked and I nodded.

I gave him an amused look when he began to mutter something under his breath but I could hear some parts like "Silly woman. Stubborn woman. Always doing whatever she wants".

I laughed and sat on the floor and he began to pout.

"What's so funny?" He asked irritated folding his hands over his chest.

"Nothing. You are so cute" I cooed and pinched his cheeks to which he slapped my hands away making me to laugh more.

"Oh I'm cute? Huh? Let me show you then how wild I can get" he said and began to unbutton his shirt.

My eyes widened and my laugh died in my throat.

"Xavier what are you doing?" I asked and began to get up.

"Nothing baby. Just proving how wild I can get" he threw his shirt somewhere in the room and approached me with a evil smirk on his face.

As soon as he was near me I turned and ran. I could hear his footsteps behind me but I ran too fast and opening the door of our room, I ran out of the room.

"Angela baby come to daddy" he sang when I hid myself behind a pillar like structure. I slapped my palm on my mouth to keep myself from laughing.

"Angel baby?" He sang and I peeked a little to see him going the other way.

I sighed and giggled leaning against the pillar.

Everything is so beautiful. My life, my home, my Xavier everything. And this all because of Xavier. I love him so much.

I was smiling to myself when a hand snaked around my waist and I was pulled to a chest. I instantly knew who he was and began to laugh pushing him on his chest.

"Bad girl. You need to be punished" Xavier sang and kissed my cheek.

I laughed and tried to push him "Xavier no. Wait" I began to laugh harder when he began to tickle me and soon I could find myself seeing the ground from a height.

Xavier threw me on his shoulder like I weight nothing and is advancing towards our bedroom.

"Xavier please put me down" I banged on his back and he spanked my butt making me gasp.

"Xavier!" I snapped and in no time I found myself on my bed and him hovering above me.

"Xavier you have to go. Flight to catch remember?" I said as I pushed his check to which he didn't even care.

"There's a lot of time for that. And before that I want to enjoy. Now stop pushing me otherwise I will be taking you in a rough way which you can't handle" he responded as he kissed the valley of my breast.

"Oh really?" I said and he stopped kissing me and looked at me with a raised eyebrow.

"Why don't you try me? If I could handle or not?" I spoke and he smirked pinning my hands over my head kissing my lips and biting them.

"Bad girl" he spoke in between the kisses and in no time I found myself naked and moaning against his chest, biting his neck, scratching his back.

"Oh God" I moaned when he slammed harder against me and began to slam faster.

"Xavier" I moaned his name and screamed when he began to pound harder.

The moment was a pure bliss for me. A perfect moment of happiness and pleasure which he gave to me.

He reached his climax at the same time with me and freed his seeds inside me. He fell next to me and wrapped his arms against me kissing my forehead softly he spoke "I will miss you. It will very hard for me. I love you".

I smiled up at him and ran my hands on his hair making him to lean over my touch.

"I will miss you too and I will wait for you. I love you too" I whispered and he smiled kissing my lips passionately and slowly.

It's been twenty two days, four hours and five minutes since he left for Europe.

He calls me everyday although our time lateral is different and out of his busy Schedule he still managed to call me and check whether everything is okay.

"Yes Xavier I'm fine. Stop worrying so much baby" I said holding my phone between my shoulder and head as I kneaded the dough using both of my hands.

"I don't know baby, I terribly miss you. I just need a reason to come back and I will be there in no time" he sighed and heard some sounds like typing from the other line. May be he is typing on his laptop.

"Xavier it's already twenty two days. More Eight days to go and you will be back. Now don't behave like a child. I told you I'm fine" I said and began to roll the dough using my hands.

I don't know why all of a sudden I wanted to eat Garlic bread.

The day Xavier left I've started to feel nauseous quite a time.

Sometimes I would wake up in the middle of the night searching for ice cream. I had to buy three to sour boxes of ice cream and I kept in my fridge in case I needed it in the middle of the night.

I kept this all from Xavier. I knew if I told him he would fight with me and he will definitely leave everything and come back here.

"My work is done here baby. I'm just staying here only for Dominic now. I can come back and he can the work by himself" he said nonchalantly and I scoffed.

"Xavier that's rude. You cannot leave him alone there. And I don't want to listen anything. You are staying there and it's final" I said stubbornly and heard him chuckle from the other end.

"What's so funny?" I asked and he replied a quiet "It's nothing".

We talked for some more minutes and finally hanged up saying "I love you" to each other.

He would make me say "I love you" Every time. He never stops that.

It's already twenty five days now and I began to cry and sob watching Titanic.

I don't know why but I wanted to watch this movie very badly. So I called Em and asked her to bring this movie and now I'm crying like a child while she is staring at me weirdly.

"Why are you crying when they are just kissing in the deck of the ship. He is not dead yet Angie" she said and I nodded replying "I know, but he is going to die at the end of the movie which is making me cry" I sobbed and wiped my face using the tissue.

"Okay?" She said unsure.

"You had been acting really weird lately Angie. Is everything fine?" She asked and I raised an eyebrow "what do you mean weirdly? Do you think I'm mad?" I snapped glaring at her.

She raised her hands in air in surrender and gestured me to calm down.

"See this? I was talking about this. You are having mood swings. Very bad mood swings. First you are laughing like a maniac when you should feel sad when the hero is fighting. Then you are crying when you should be awed when they are kissing. And now you are snapping" she reasoned and I nodded my head still not getting her point.

"You even warned me that if I don't reach your house within an hour with the movie then you would strangle me to death, which is really new" she said running a hand on her hair.

"Are you feeling good lately?" She asked and I nodded unsure.

"But I have been feeling nauseous and cravings lately" I said and soon I watched as she began to grin like a wolf.

"What is it?" I asked when she got up.

"Stay here. I will be back soon" She said and clutching her handbag she went out of the house.

I furrowed my eyebrows in confusion but nevertheless watched the remaining parts of the movie.

"Take this" something was placed on my palm by Em who was panting like she ran a marathon.

I eyed the thing and found it as a pregnancy kit.

My eyes widened and I mentally slapped my forehead for not thinking about this.

"Do you think this might be the reason for my" I trailed off when I found Em nodding at me positively.

Closing my eyes I sighed and went inside the bathroom to check.

My heart hammered against my rib cage as I waited patiently for the results and when I got the result tears began to blind me and I opened the door of the bathroom running towards Em and hugging her, showing her the kit.

****

Xavier Pov

I am really frustrated. First I cannot go back to home when my work is already finished here. Secondly, I miss Angel terribly. I don't know why this lately I have been craving to reach her.

I just want her in my arms anyhow. I don't understand this. Every time I think about her I find my heart beat rising.

This is really strange.

The security back in my home is really tight. I made sure no one could hurt her when I'm away on my trip.

So what is this feeling?

"Awww Xavi boo just few more days and you can go back" Dominic cooed spinning the paper weight on the table as I worked on my laptop drinking coffee from my cup.

"Shut up and finish your work quickly. You jerk. You brought Lauren with you here and that's why you don't miss her. Think about me what I'm feeling right now" I glared at him as I furiously typed on my laptop.

"Aww think about me too Xavi boo. I can't handle it alone. You are my friend. Can't you do this much for me?" He wiggled his eyebrows.

"That's absurd" I muttered and drank from my coffee.

"You can handle this of our own. You are just irritating me" I stated and he laughed finding this humorous.

My phone rang and I furrowed my eyebrows in confusion seeing the caller ID.

"Angel?" I muttered seeing the call at this time. I calculated the time mentally and found it should be late at night back there.

Oh God. Is everything alright?

I panicked and picked up the call "Hello? Angel? Baby? Is everything alright? Are you alright? What ha-" she cut me off saying "Xavier will you relax? Everything is fine".

My heart beat slowed down a bit and I sighed running a hand in my hair.

She began to talk about random things and I hummed in response while typing in my laptop.

I drank my coffee and eyed Dominic who was continuously busy spinning the paper weight sitting across my table on the chair.

"Xavier?" She asked making sure if I was listening and I hummed in response sipping my coffee.

I heard her taking a deep breath and suddenly she blurted out "Xavier you need to come back home. I have a good news for you" she said putting stress on the last two words that immediately made me realize what it could be making me to spit the coffee out directly on Dominic's Face.

He stayed still for some minute with stoic face and soon he changed his expression animating like a cartoon and scrunched his nose in disgust wiping the coffee out of his face.

"What the Fuck man?" He yelled glaring at me but I was in my different world.

Wiping my mouth I finally spoke "what did you just say?" I asked again and she replied again "Xavier come back home,". As the words registered in my mind I got up from my seat and went towards Dominic who was still busy muttering colorful words under his breath wiping the coffee from his face.

I went next to his chair and when he looked up at me in confusion I smiled like a goof and holding his chair with my hands I swirled his chair in happiness while he shouted "What are you doing? I will die? Lauren will kill yo--" his voice was inaudible to my ears as I swirled his chair like a maniac, laughing loudly.

I was sure Angel heard me laughing and she began to question me. But me being me, I hanged up on her and continued to torture Dominic.

I felt so happy.

Now I understand why I wanted to go back to her. I felt really happy. Out of the world.

Suddenly I stopped spinning him and slammed my hands on his hand rest while he held his head.

"I'm going back. You are handling this alone" I said adamantly and to my surprise he said " Go away. Go wherever you want. Just go away from me" he cursed loudly holding his throbbing head and I grinned punching his shoulder "Awww Dommy Dom, Thank you" I cooed while he gave me a look like he saw two heads on my body.

"Go away. What's wrong with you?" He yelled and I took my laptop, bag and dancing like a fool I made my way out of the building while people stared at me weirdly.

Not even bothering to think about my luggage I reached the airport and soon using my private jet I flied back to home. On reaching home, I used the spare key I went inside the house and towards the bedroom.

It was early in the morning. I found my life sleeping soundlessly on the bed with a book on her chest.

I was surprised by myself when I found myself kneeling near her belly and kissing it instead of Angel's face.

My eyes teared up because of the happiness and slowly I raised her top little up to expose her skin.

I kissed in her belly and placed my head on her belly lightly whispering "Dad is home baby. I'm not going to leave again".

A hand was placed on my head and I heard a voice speak to me softly "Xavier?".

I gazed up on her and finally tears began to roll down my cheeks.

"Is it true? Please tell me whatever I'm thinking right now is true" I whispered and she nodded smiling at me.

I marked the way her skin glowed. She has changed. She looked little chubbier than before but more beautiful.

"I'm pregnant. We are going to be Mom and Dad, soon" she whispered as she teared up and hugged me resting her head on my shoulder.

Finally my family is complete.

Chapter 95

Xavier Pov

"Ace don't go there. Come here!" my wife shouted as my five-year-old son ran toward the boundary of our house with Lily following him. Lily was the daughter of Em and Lucas and she was only four years old.

"Baby calm down. You should not be yelling in this state." I said trying to calm her down as I patted her back and made her sit on the chair which was in our lawn.

Angel is nine months pregnant and the date is nearing. She keeps worrying about Ace's well-being. Ace, my little devil is very hard to control.

Just like me.

He has inherited his mother's eyes but his remaining features resemble mine.

A little version of me.

Angel and I decided to have a gap of 5 years before having another kid as she wanted to give her complete attention to her first child and I respected that.

When she first told me that she was pregnant I almost spat out the coffee onto Dominic's face. I was in my office busy and away from home for a month. I took the first flight and reached home in order to be close to my life which was growing inside Angel's womb.

When Ace was born I was the happiest man on earth. I would have happily died when he first called me "Dad". I swear to God Angel gave me every happiness that a man could desire for and now that she is pregnant again, I couldn't wish for anything else.

"Here drink this. You will feel better." I said giving her a cup of tea.

"Thank you" she whispered and took a sip from her cup.

Life couldn't get any more beautiful as it is right now. I love this. My Wife, my son, my baby, my family everything.

Sure, we got into fights and arguments many times but every time we patched up and came back loving each other even more. Our love grew with time and I'm more than happy about it.

"Xavier do something. Ace never listens to me" she whined shaking her head.

"He is just playing. Let him be. Okay?" I asked and she sighed nodding.

We continued to sip our tea in silence and watched as the kids played with each other.

"Xavier! Dustin is coming to meet us tomorrow" she said and I turned around towards her in my chair placing my cup on the table.

"Really? It's great" I said and smiled to myself.

After our honeymoon, I found out that Dustin was gay. It happened one day when I came back from office to find no one at home. I called Angel but she didn't receive any of my calls. Later that night when she returned, I was really angry and so I confronted her about where she was and when she told me that Dustin had come all the way to Chicago to meet her I was furious.

I was really pissed off with her because she did not tell about that Dusty boy and when I expressed how much I hated her being friends with him, she blurted out "He is Gay Xavier. What's wrong with you?" making all my anger fly out of the window.

I never expected that. Then it took me a week to appease her. That week was hell.

Presently, Dustin and I are in good terms but I still prefer Dusty to Dustin, to his utter annoyance.

"Xavier?" She called and I replied "Yeah?".

"There is this question that I always wanted to ask you," she said and turned to look at me.

"Yeah what is it, Love?" I asked.

"Remember the night of our marriage when you confronted me that I married you even after getting your letter?" She asked and I furrowed my eyebrows trying to remember.

"Yeah I remember," I said remembering everything.

"What letter were you talking about? I never received any letter" she said and after staring at her for two minutes I replied, more like shouted "What?".

"Hey no need to shout" she winced blocking her ear with her palms.

"You mean you never received that letter?" I asked shocked. I did not know that she never received that letter. I remember giving it to a boy and asking him to give the letter to her and later the boy did say that he had done it. Then how is it possible that she never received that letter.

"So? What was in that letter?" She asked eagerly and I sighed shaking my head.

"Oh, it's nothing. I was an Idiot back then. Thank God that you didn't receive that letter" I muttered the last part to myself feeling relieved.

"What?" She asked her eyes questioning me.

"Oh, it's nothing. Just a list of things for the bride. It's not that important. Just forget it." I lied smiling at her.

She smiled back and shrugged her shoulders saying "okay".

But it did nag me and I kept thinking *"Where did that letter go?"*

"Ace, Lily come here now" I heard Angel shouting at the kids and I looked towards them to see Angel placing a hand on her belly rubbing circles unmindfully. Ace and Lily came running to us and they both sat near the glass door playing with each other. I smiled seeing both of them along each other unlike me who always fought against my cousins when I was a kid.

"Xavier!" I heard Angel screaming and I looked towards her to find her holding her belly and her face contorted with a pained expression.

"Angel? What happened? Are you alright?" I panicked seeing her condition.

"Xavier! I think it's the time" she screamed holding her belly and I ran to her kneeling in front of her.

"What?"

"Xavier My water just broke" she screamed and tears began to roll down her cheeks.

"Oh shit!" I muttered and scooped her up in my arms running towards my car with the children following me and hurriedly drove off to the hospital.

******

Brad's Pov

"I am back darling," I said removing the leaves from my wife's grave.

"Miss me?" I said while placing the white lilies, that I bought for her, on her grave.

"I know it's been very long time since I came here but what did I say?" I said smiling and sat near her grave.

"I told you I'll be back only after I get the good news about Xavier," I said remembering the day when I last visited her grave.

"I found the right girl who changed him and saved him for good. You won't believe their love until you see her with your own eyes. I promise next time I would bring her and Xavier with me to visit you".

"Her name is Angela. She gave birth to our grandson, Ace who is now five years old. She will be soon giving birth to our second grandchild and this time we all are hoping for a baby girl".

"Your son has finally changed. He has become an obedient son and a loving husband. He is running our business really well. Actually better than me but I will never say this to him. This will only boost his ego" I chuckled at the last part.

"Oh and talking about ego I have something," I said as I began to fish my pocket pulling out a piece of paper.

"Just see this. See what your silly son did" I scowled opening the folded letter and reading out loud

"*I love someone else so you please refuse to this marriage. I know that Dad has chosen you to be my wife but I'm not worth it.*" I read and shook my head in annoyance.

"Thank God I saw this letter in that kid's hands and asked him about it".

When I read it, I couldn't believe my own son. He was really an ass but I am his father and I will be damned if I let him loose Angela, a Jewel, as his wife. So I asked the kid to tell him that he did his work and I kept that letter to myself. I knew that I was being selfish but I wanted to save my son and Angela was the perfect option for me. I sighed and looked up at the sky tearing the letter and throwing it away.

"It's not needed anymore" I muttered to myself.

Suddenly my phone began to ring and I saw the caller ID displaying Xavier's name on it.

I took the call and received the second big happiness of my life.

"Amelia Grace Knights," I muttered as I thought about the new born baby's name.

Thanks for reading and supporting my work.

If you liked my work and would like to support me then please go to my profile by clicking my name and you can support me by clicking on that "Support" button. As a writer, I need your support so that I could cope up with my daily life and write more for you all.

So please, click on that support button available on my profile.

Thank you.

Meanwhile the next chapters will be some spin off of Xavier and Angela

Chapter 96

Hi,

I just got this old draft of a spin off that I wrote three years back. It's in third Pov. I hope you enjoy it. :)

Xavier looked up at the night sky from his terrace to see the stars twinkling and shining brightly. He felt a presence behind him and instantly knew from the familiar fragrance of his wife Angela. "Your coffee" she handed him his favourite coffee.

He smiled and took the coffee mug from her feeling grateful. "What are you doing up here? It's freezing!" she exclaimed as she rubbed her palms together shivering, feeling the chilly wind touching her skin.

"You Cold?" Xavier asked looking at her state to which she just shook her head no, smiling. "Come here!" he asked her by holding the coffee mug in his one hand and stretching the other one asking her to get closer to him. She obliged and walked into his arms.

He wrapped his arms around her body and felt her cold skin against his warm palm. "You are cold! Let's get in!" he said and both of them walked inside the warm house and they went to the living room where the room heater was on. Angela was relieved to get in.

"So? What are you thinking?" she asked once she saw him relaxed and sipping from his coffee. "Nothing! What made you think that I am thinking something?" Xavier asked amazed at how his wife is noticing his every single movements of him. Angela smiled at this.

She took the loose strands of her hair that was falling on her face and twirled it between her finger before tucking it behind her ear. Xavier looked at her quiet behaviour and shook his head smiling. "I know that you have found out about it" he blurted out.

Angela looked up at him with a questioning look. "I know that you have already found out about the business deal and about my one month trip to Europe!" he said to which Angela bit down on her lips hard looking the other way trying to hide her emotions.

They were already married to each other for more than a year and yet it feels as if he had got to know her just yesterday. He loved her from the bottom of his heart and the mere thought of her getting hurt because of him made him go crazy.

Angela sat there playing with the hem of her black reversible riddler dress. "I was just going to talk about it!" she exclaimed nervously. She didn't quite understand how her husband has find out that she already knew about the upcoming business trip.

It was his secretary Ron, who told Angela about the trip. Though it was unintentional but Xavier wanted to talk about it by himself to Angela. Xavier was really angry when he got to know that the most finest man of his company has managed to spill the secret.

But eventually he forgave Ron, and decided to talk about it with Angela when he gets back home from his office. "I am not going!" he said all of a sudden. Angela looked up at him steadily studying his facial features and expressions. "What?" she whispered.

"Why? I know its really important" Angela said once she registered that Xavier was being undoubtedly serious about not going in that trip. "Nothing is important to me than you" he said and closed his eyes as a horrifying memory came flooding into his mind.

Angela noticed his balled fists and instantly she knew that he was being haunted by the memories of John Winters who once abducted her in his absence wanting to satisfy his own perverted ill feelings towards her. It was one hell of an incident for Angela too.

Though that wicked man is no more alive in this world, but it still doesn't change the fact that John still managed to scare her only by thinking about him. The topic was delicate to Xavier and the fact that someone tried to harm her made him go insane.

Angela knew that she had to move on in her life and Xavier too needs to move on. She got up from her seat and took a seat next to him on the lounge and held his balled fists releasing it from the tight grip. His hands were giant as compared to her small ones.

The mere touch of Angela soothed Xavier and he pulled her closer to him relieved that it was just a dark past. She was fine and was now sitting in encircled in his arms right next to him. He kissed the top of her head softly whispering how much he loved her.

Angela felt honoured to be blessed with a caring husband. He was a darling to her and like him she too loved him the most in this entire world and wanted nothing but to stay wrapped up in his arm's protection. But as much as she wanted that she had to hold up.

She knew that the business was really important to Xavier's company and because of her he was willing to slip it off his hands which she couldn't let it happen. So she retreated back from his arms and stood up from the lounge. "I am going to pack your stuffs."

She said and turned around to leave only to be stopped by Xavier. "I am not going!" he said as he held her forearm stopping her from leaving. "And I said you are going. It's important, Xavier!" Angela said and tried to pry her hand out of his grip.

When she succeed in getting her hands free, she picked her phone up from the table and walked towards the direction of their bedroom. "I don't want to go!" Xavier argued as he trailed after her like a puppy. She sighed at his stubbornness and shook her head.

She took out a cotton ball and a cleanser from the dressing table to wipe the makeup from her face. After she was done, she went inside the bathroom to wash her face and she came back all refreshed ready to pack her husband's bag for the one month trip.

"Angel!" Xavier said and jerked her up towards him which made her gasp. All of a sudden, his mouth was on her kissing her passionately trying to make her give up on the idea but she knew it all. She got back to her senses and pushed him away, her lips swollen.

Xavier smirked seeing her swollen and red lips proud of his kissing tactics while Angela narrowed her eyes at him and she took the water bottle from the nightstand and gulped down the water feeling hot all of a sudden. Xavier never really seemed to amaze her.

He was always unpredictable. One second he was all aggressive and angry and the next moment he was the most sweetest and darling to her. His mood swings were even worst than her. Her pale skin had a tint of pink because of the way Xavier was now looking at her.

She made up her mind. Now it was her new resolution not to let Xavier touch her whenever they argue else she knew she would definitely lose her sanity if he goes on kissing her like that whenever they had an argument. She kept the bottle down and sighed.

She walked inside their walk-in-closet and took out the navy blue travel bag and kept it on the bed before opening it. "I am not going Angela!" Xavier exclaimed as he walked to her and tried to snatch the bag away from her. "Xavier!" she snapped.

"Angela!"

Both of them had a staring contest to which Angela won after Xavier's phone rang and he had to get the call. It was from Dominic, Xavier's best friend who was also joining Xavier in the one month trip. Angela was relieved that Dominic called at the right time.

She began to get his stuffs while he talked on his phone glancing at her way giving her narrowed eyes look seeing his stuffs being packed. Angela just smiled and mentally she made up a plan to make him agree on the trip.

A perfect sexy gift to him, from her.

Chapter 97

Xavier looked at Angela through the crowd of people in their house. She looked breathtakingly gorgeous in that red bodycon dress. All he wanted to do was to walk pushing past the people and drag her towards their bedroom where he could have her in his own ways.

"Damn!" he muttered drinking the wine.

"What? Did you say something?" his father asked looking at him confused.

"Uh No No!" Xavier shook his head at his father and smiled nervously before turning around to talk with his business associates. "Better if I keep my thoughts to myself" he thought.

Xavier's father organised a small business party where all their business partners and associates were invited with their family members. Xavier had too brought Angela to the party which was held in Xavier's dad's house. He expected it to be a boring party but to his absolute shock Angela made it totally different what he had actually thought. She looked even more sexy in that red dress. He glanced at his wife as she talked with the other ladies in the party. Clearly she was having fun in socializing.

Completely opposite to what Xavier had to go through.

Like a statue he stood with his business associates not even listening to any of their conversations. He took another glass of wine from the server and glanced towards Angela to find her already staring at him. A sly grin marred his face when he caught his wife already staring at him.

"Interesting!"

Xavier excused himself from his associates and walked towards the ladies with one hand in his pant pockets while the other holding the glass of wine.

"Oh here is your husband" said Mrs Smith who was Xavier's aunt. "Ah! So you all are here" Xavier said smiling at them but smirked looking at Angela.

He already had everything planned inside his mind and as he was The Great Mr. Egoistic he wouldn't let anyone come in between what he wanted. And currently,what he wished for was Angela his wife, to be in his arms. He had been away from home from last two weeks.

He was away in a business meeting but as soon as he landed back in Chicago he had to attend the party with his wife as ordered by his father for it was an important gathering for their company and Xavier had to oblige to his father's order. But he couldn't resist the attraction that he felt for Angela.

He wanted her and that was final. He was going to have her. He could no longer control it anymore. To his absolute relief they had left Ace their four year old son in his with Lucas and Emily.

That means the house is empty. He could have Angela to himself now.

He took small steps towards Angel and soon stood by her side. "Come to the side!" he whispered into her ear before leaving her with those ladies. She glanced his back and excused herself from the ladies. Like Xavier, she too couldn't get a chance to talk to him.

She wanted to welcome him home properly but she had to get ready for the party and as soon as Xavier arrived they left for the party. She walked towards the corner and smiled seeing her husband seeping wine and already looking her way.

"Xavier" she smiled.

She kept her hands on his chest and took the glass of wine from his hands. "You already had enough. No more!" she said and kept the glass on the nearby table. Xavier truly was her Prince charming. She chuckled when Xavier blew air out from his mouth on her face.

"Let's get back home," Xavier whispered into her ear to which she shook her head yes. Like him, she was too eager to reach back home. He held her hands and both of them walked towards the exit but were stopped by none other but Brad. Xavier's dad.

"Where are you two going? Come let me introduce you two to Mr. Benson" he said and dragged both of them towards the man. Xavier glared at his father's suit while Angela just shook her head at Xavier's sulking face. He looked like a cute little beaver.

"Cute!"

Xavier stood their uninterested to their conversation. "So much for a little romance" he thought. Meanwhile, Angela was again dragged away by the other ladies for talking about charity work. Xavier closed his eyes and stood quietly while his father talked business.

An idea struck his mind and he grinned like a Cheshire cat.

"What?" Brad asked looking at his odd behaviour. "N-Nothing" Xavier laughed nervously and stood their silently waiting for his father to finish talking.

"What if we can't leave?" He could still get her.

As soon as he got the chance he left searching for Angela. He was in a need to hurry and get Angela before anybody else could finds them and make them wait any longer. He found her drinking water near the filter.

"Angel!" he said once he reached her. "Xavi-"

"C'mon!"

"Where are we going?" Angela asked Xavier while he held her hand and dragged her with him. "Upstairs" he said and smiled cheekily at her. "They must be searching for us," Angel whispered to him worried. He didn't reply but both of them went upstairs.

As soon as they reached Xavier's childhood room, Xavier slammed the door shut and pulled Angel closer to him. "Xavier!" Angel giggled. "I have missed you" he said as he nudged his head in the crook of her neck inhaling her scent.

"Me too" she whispered smiling.

Xavier began to kiss her neck which made her giggle. "I-" he was again cut off by the sound of his phone ringing. "Xavier your phone!" Angela said when he didn't pick it up. "Forget it" he said concentrating more on her. "Xavier" Angela tried to push him away.

"Ugh! Fine" he muttered irritated and took the phone out and looked at it to find it was Angela's brother who was calling. "Its your brother" he said before picking it up. "Xavier!" Lucas Angela's brother said: "Ace wants to talk to you" he said and Xavier heard the commotion before Ace his son answered the phone.

"Dad!" the sweet little boy said.

"What's up buddy?" Xavier asked while Angela looked at him curiously thinking if everything was alright. "can't sleep" he said but he sounded sleepy as he yawned while talking. Xavier smiled at his son.

"Its alright buddy. Close your eyes and think about the story that mommy has told you" Xavier said to which Angela smiled. "I can't sleep without my blanket!" Ace groaned. "Oh! your blanket" Xavier said as he understood now. Ace could never sleep without his favourite fluffy blanket.

"Buddy give the phone to Lucas" Xavier asked and Ace hummed in response. "Lucas, the blanket must be inside the bag. Angela made sure to pack it. Please give it to Ace. He can't sleep without it" Xavier told Lucas.

"Oh! okay" he said in response and searched for it holding the phone. When he got it, they hung up on each other. "So? where were we?" Xavier asked smirking as he took a step towards Angela. When the door knocked and Xavier groaned in irritation. "Son are you there?" it was Brad, Xavier's father. Xavier held the bridge of his nose while Angela chose to answer the door.

"uh! Yes. I came to use the washroom!" she said and walked towards the door and opened it. "Oh! c'mon lets go downstairs. The guests are waiting for you two" he said and walked downstairs leaving them alone.

"I swear-" Xavier groaned in irritation.

The rest of the party, Xavier and Angela had to avoid each other because if they didn't then they knew they would surely lose to the temptation. Angela began to think that Xavier is fine now. The way he talked to the guests, he laughed and enjoyed with them.

She was happy for him. When the party ended, Xavier and Angela made their way to their car. "What a great party it was!" Xavier laughed while driving.

"He is normal," Angela thought but all of a sudden he stopped the car and looked at her.

"Come to the backseat!"

Chapter 98

Just because you all liked the spin offs, here is another one for you guys.

Xavier looked towards the sea, the breeze hitting his face as he smiled looking at his wife Angela who was enjoying the waves with her friend Emily. Lucas, Emily's husband and Angela's brother laughed at them as the wave made them lose their balance and both of them tumbled down into the water.

Xavier too laughed a little and sat on the sand looking at them who were enjoying their time. He looked at Angela's smiling face. He regretted it till date the way he treated her when they were newly married. *It's all fresh in his memories.*

He lied down and closed his eyes thinking how it would have been if he got to know her before their marriage. Probably, he must have felt in love with her in the first sight if that would ever have happened. Angela was his wife now and he is in love with her.

He couldn't ask for anything more to god. But still, it always came into his mind. *How it would have been if he got to know her in some other circumstances?*

It was like a wish if he could go back in time he would have never let the old Xavier do all that to her.

He closed his eyes for some minutes, but didn't really realise when he fell into a deep slumber. The waves of the sea like a lullaby to his ear and cold breeze making it impossible not to get a good nap. Almost immediately his body gave out and he slept soundly.

"I said give me that *fucking* keys" I snapped at my driver who wasn't giving me my keys of the car.

"But sir, Mr. Brad had clearly ordered us not to let you out of the house until he comes back," he said and all I wanted was to punch him right on his face.

"Keys!" I demanded.

I asked with a warning low tone and he gulped before handing me the keys.

"And you are fired! Get lost!" I roared as I opened the car's door and got in.

"W-What.. but sir.." he came near my car windshield and looked at me begging me with his eyes not to do that to him.

I rolled my eyes at him. I didn't really care. I am Xavier Knights after all. The city's most eligible bachelor and the only heir of my dad's oil business.

"Get lost!" I snapped my fingers at him and showed him the exit gate.

How dare he to tell me no to do what I wanted?

Idiot!

I ignited the engine and drove out of the mansion towards the driveway. These days are really frustrating for me. My dad has been nagging me to get married and settle down.

Why should I?

No! Why should I?

I don't mind staying single forever. I already have the charm and looks.

Women love me for my looks and wealth. I can get any woman I want. So why should I even settle down? I made a mistake once of being in a relationship beforehand. I ended up badly, broken and devastated. I don't really have any plans of getting back to that state.

I scoffed seeing the caller ID of my phone. "Give up already dad!" I muttered rolling my eyes. As soon as the call stopped I picked up the phone and called my best friend Dominic.

"Hey Xavi!" he chirped.

"Shut up! What the fuck is Xavi? Its Xavier!" I said to him.

"Aww. Okay tell me what is it? You never really call me for any chit chatting. So? What can I do for you?" he got straight to the point for which I smirked in appreciation. That's my friend. He knows me very well. "I need a favour" I said and parked my car.

I parked my car at the side of the road beside a store named *The Blossoms*' probably some flower shop may be. I ignored it and concentrated on my phone call. I could see the weather changing into a dark one with the clouds gathering up and some distant voice of thunder.

"Yeah?" he asked."I want some days alone. Let me have your private Island in the north for a vacation" I told him as I looked out of the windshield when it started drizzling."Why are you even asking?I will get my jet ready for you. Text me the date and time.

"Yeah! Thanks man!" I said and he laughed. "No problem" he said and we hung up. I badly needed this vacation. Maybe dad would forget about me settling down if I stay away from his eyesight for some days, the vacation will surely help me in that.I smiled at it.

I was just going to ignite the car's engine when it began to rain heavily following with thundering and lightning. "Great!" I muttered. From my windshield I saw a woman's silhouette running wearing a white dress running into that shop.I couldn't really see.

A loud thundering was heard which made me jerk in my seat a little.

"Damn! I need to get out"I muttered and thought about getting inside that shop for shelter.I couldn't really stay inside the car in this bad weather for much longer.So I counted to three and ran out of the car towards the shop getting soaked in my way. I pushed pass the glass door and got inside the shop completely drenched. "Ah man!" I tried to wipe the rain water out of my face. "I hate rain!" I said and shook my head.

"Hi!" I heard a woman.

I looked up towards the counter to find a brunette looking at me with a smile on her face. "Ah the rain!" I said pointing my finger towards the door."Oh! It's okay" she smiled and got back into her work.I bit down my lips. Might I buy some flowers for shelter.

"Um where are the orchids?"I asked the woman and she looked up smiling at me.

"That way" she pointed her finger and I nodded before walking inside even more towards the shelves. Meanwhile, I took my handkerchief out of my pocket and wiped the water from my skin.

As I made my way there, I stopped in my track seeing a woman standing with her back facing towards me. She was wearing a white knee length dress and she was completely drenched. The woman was finger brushing her wet hair.

"So she was the one I saw" I thought.

I shook my head and went towards the shelf where the woman from before told me. I got the orchids and took some of it out of there smirking at them. "Might I give them to Nicole or Jenna," I smirked at the thought. I turned around holding them but stopped when my sight fell on that white dress woman. She turned towards me and for the first time ever I felt as if my breath has been taken away from me.The woman threw her wet hair away from her face on her shoulder and shook her head.She had this small smile on her face while she took the flowers and kept them on the shelves. Her eyes blue, she was tall, slim and most importantly she had this aura. So peaceful and calm."Who is she?"I thought. I couldn't really avert my gaze from her. She had my whole attention. *Pretty!*

I didn't really realise when I lost the grip from the flower and it fell down on the floor. Everything was like in a slow motion. All of a sudden I felt as if I'm in some kind of romantic movie with the violins playing next to me.

"Who is s-she?" I thought.

I bent down and picked the flowers up. My heart beats raised when I saw her again smiling at those flowers. Whatever I was feeling was really new to me. Foreign feelings. Unknowingly I took a step further towards her wanting to know her, see her from closer.

All of a sudden her blue eyes fell on me. “Can I help you?” the sweetest voice ever that I ever heard.

“Oh so she worked here,” I thought.

“Are you taking those? Sir?” she asked looking at the flowers in my hand. I couldn’t even stop my hands from raising up.

"For you!" I said. She gave me a look but took the flowers looking confused.

“You are bea-” I woke up when I felt water on my face.

“Xavier!” I saw Angela kneeling next to me on the sand. It was a dream?

"Xavier!" she said as she bent over and kissed me on my cheek.

“You are beautiful” I completed.

Chapter 99

Xavier woke up to some noises and he rubbed his eyes before looking towards the other side of the bed finding the spot vacant.

"Angel?" he muttered and looked for his wife in the dark room. He checks the time to find it's half past five in the morning.

"Angel?"

He gets out of his bed and walked towards the attached bathroom where he heard the noises coming.

"Baby are you alright?" he questioned before knocking the door. When he got no response he opened the door and found Angel puking into the commode.

She was sitting in a crouched position near the commode with her hair tied up in a messy bun. She took a deep breath before leaning her head against her hand that was on the seat of the commode. Barely able to breathe as she started to throw up *again.*

"Angel" Xavier was there in a flash rubbing her back. He was one heck of a worried man. When it comes to his wife he would do anything in this world to make her happy. But here he was feeling helpless as he thought what to do. She groaned feeling exhausted.

"Are you alright? Why are you throwing up? C'mon lets get you to the hospital. You are not we-" he was cut off by Angel as she kept a soothing yet trembling hand on his smiling at him.

"Relax! I am okay" she murmured. "Okay?" Xavier questioned. "You are okay?"

"Do you look okay? You are throwing up so badly and you are saying you are okay?" and the scolding Xavier was back. "C'mon lets get you to the hospital" he tugged his wife's arm but she stopped him and made him sit next to her.

"I know why I am throwing up."

Xavier sat next to her in that narrow section of the bathroom and gave her a confused look. "It's the morning sickness. I am going to get it everyday" Angela sighed and rubbed her forehead feeling a mild headache making its way.

"What? Everyday?" Xavier asked.

"Yes, everyday. Perks of being pregnant," Angela smiled at her confused husband. Though she wasn't feeling any need to puke anymore but she was feeling the headache growing up in her head.

"In that case, we need an appointment from the doctor immediately."

"Ah yes! I will just take an appointment soon. I don't think I can bear this anymore" she sighed. "What do you mean by anymore?" Xavier asked narrowing his eyes at his wife. Angela gave him a sheepish smile before getting up to wash her mouth. "An- Angela?"

"I am asking you!" Xavier got up from the place and watched as his wife brushed her teeth barely looking at him from the mirror. Realisation hit him and he held the bridge of his nose. "You were having this from the beginning and you hide it from me. Isn't it?"

Angela washed her mouth and patted the towel on her face. "I didn't want to worry you" she smiled at him looking through the mirror. "Oh Angela!" Xavier turned her around and kissed her forehead before hugging her."Why don't you understand? I have the same responsibility as you."

"I need to know everything that goes on with you. Both of you are my responsibility. I can't see you going through all the pain and sufferings of parenthood all by yourself. I need to do my part too. I love you so much. You are my life baby" Xavier whispered.

"I love you too but you came home so tired last night and I didn't really want to disturb your sleep"Angela said as she untied her hair from the bun."Angel" Xavier sighed.

"You are more important to me than my work,you know it" he said as he leaned against her.

"Okay! Now don't think too much. Just let me about any changes your body goes through. I will ask Ron set an appointment.We will be visiting the doctor together. I want to know everything" Xavier said keenly.

"Okay!" Angela smiled. "There is some changes already."

"Huh?" Xavier frowned. "Can't you see?" Angela frowned crossing her arms against chest. "What?" Xavier questioned not really getting her. "Oh my god Xavier are you blind?" Angela snapped at him.

"Oh no! *Fucking Mood swings*" Xavier thought gulping his saliva.

Angela looked and waited for him to speak but he didn't she balls her fists. All of a sudden she wanted to hit her husband hard. She never really raised her voice at him and here she was thinking to hit him. She was confused too. "I am as fat as a cow" she said.

Xavier blinked his eyes before coughing out "What?" He couldn't believe what she just said. "What what? Can't you see I have put on weight?" Angela said slowly enunciating each words. Xavier looked up and down of her body and laughed out clutching his stomach.

If looks could kill Xavier must have been already six feet under the ground. Xavier laughed not believing that she just called herself a cow.

"What is wrong with her?" he thought. His laugh soon died on his throat when he saw her face filled with rage. "Oh no!"

Angela was so angry that she just wanted to climb a tall tower and scream like a king kong. She couldn't believe that Xavier just laughed at her. Is she really that fat that she even looks funny like a joker which made her own husband laugh at her. "Why you!"

"No! No! I am not laughing at you!" Xavier tried to reason as he looked nervous now all of a sudden. Like an eagle Angel looked as if she was ready to hunt but here her prey was right before her eyes. She looked murderous now. Whatever she was feeling was new to her.

Never had she ever thought about killing her husband. But now she was. "So? I do look like a cow hu?" she said all of a sudden sweetly. Sweats formed on the back of Xavier's neck. He felt nervous all of a sudden looking at her. She looked intimidating yet hot.

He smirked thinking the ways he would treat her in the bed all of a sudden. Maybe she would try to dominate him in the bed this time. The thought itself gave him a hard on but what he missed was the murderous look which was now back on his wife's face.

Angela mistook his smirk as if he was really agreeing that she really looked like a cow. "Wow! first of all!" she snapped which immediately Xavier out of his naughty thoughts. "Because of you" she pointed an accusing finger at him "I am pregnant" she snapped.

"What happened to you hu?" she took a step further intimidating him. "Uh An-Angel" Xavier stammered now scared. "Nothing!" she screamed. "I have to go through everything. From *morning sickness* to every single change in the body. But you! nothing has changed."

"I look like a cow now. Damn! you are even agreeing. Wow! At least you could have lied!" she yelled even more. "I am so foolish!" she screamed pulling her hair. "Get out!" she pointed her finger towards the door. "But Ange-" he was rudely cut off with a glare.

"But I wasn't laughing at yo-" he was cut in between again "Oh so now you think I am blind hu?" she bellowed in rage.

"Angel-" Xavier jerked up in fear when he saw her picking up the shampoo bottle.

"I said get out of the bathroom!"she snapped ready to throw it.

"Angela! Baby please put it down. You will get hurt" Xavier tried to get that shampoo bottle but she pushed him and positioned it to throw it at him "Get out!" she glared.

"Fine! Fine! I am going" he said nervously and took side steps to get out of the bathroom.

All the while Angel looked at him like a hawk. He closed the door shut and took in a deep breath.

"You and your *fucking mood swings*" he hit the bathroom's door by his foot angrily.

"What did you say?"came her voice.

"N-Nothing baby Nothing!" he ran out of the room.

Chapter 100

Xavier looked up through the mirror to find Angela tying little Amelia's hair as Ace made his tie all by himself and adjusted his glasses before walking to his dad and looking at himself through the mirror, satisfied. Today was Ace's school parents meeting and both Angela and Xavier made sure to attend it on time and it was why they hurried up.

"C'mon buddy," Xavier said as he held Ace's hand and walked out following Angela who was carrying a three year old Amelia in her arms as they hurried down the stairs meeting Lucy in the way.

"Here you go," Lucy handed Amelia's school bag and kissed her cheeks before waving a bye as Xavier and Angela walked out of the house to their car.

"Let's drop Amelia in her preschool and then head for Ace's," Angela said as she got into the car, in the driver seat while Ace sat in the front in passenger seat and both Xavier and Amelia sat in the back seat. Quickly, Xavier bought his laptop out and merged his mind in it, working on a project while Angela drove off.

It was a habit now. Xavier always worked on his laptop while Angela drove a number of times, none of them minding anything else. Angela was a good driver and occasionally she would drive Xavier to his office while she headed to her own office. After Amelia was born and as soon as Amelia started preschool, Angela made up her mind that she was going to work again forgetting about her past work experience and even though Xavier was reluctant in the beginning to let her work, he was at ease when he saw his wife enjoying her work. It was what he had always wanted.

A happy family and there they were. The four of them as they completed each other and Xavier couldn't be any more happier than he already was.

"Okay, So, here we are," Angela sang as she parked her car right before Amelia's preschool gate and Xavier kept his laptop aside as he hugged and pecked his little angels' cheeks making her giggle, and helped her out of the car where the teacher welcomed her as always standing near the gate and took her inside with the rest of the children.

"Alright, let's head for Aces' school now," Angela said and Xavier nodded knowing she might have seen his reply from the rear view mirror.

Five minutes prior to the meeting, three of them were now on their feet running towards the teachers' cabin with Angela clicking her heels and Xavier right behind her making sure she didn't trip while Ace ran in front leading the way.

"Mom be quick," Ace urged as both of his parents finally managed to reach the teacher's cabin right on time.

Angela looked up at Xavier and he stared back at her and immediately she was fixing his hair while he was adjusting her suit and her pencil skirt and both of them looked at each other and nodded "Perfect!"

It was there first time attending a parents meeting and to tell that they were kind of nervous would be an overstatement.

They were determined to leave a good impression on Ace's teacher because they knew Ace being the smart kid would have already impressed her and now it was actually their turn to impress the teacher as his parents.

"Don't worry, it's going to be alright!" Xavier said as taking in deep breaths and nodding at Angela, looking unsure to what he just said.

"Are you telling this to me or to yourself?" Angela asked and Xavier shrugged not wanting to answer, because he himself didn't have any idea about what he was saying. Finally glancing at each other and nodding for the umpteenth time, they walked forward towards the door and both of them collided to each other in the process. They heard someone clicking his tongue and looked back to find Ace giving them a weird look. Xavier, clearing his throat and not wanting to embarrass himself before his son took the step forward and opened the door letting Angela go through it first out of chivalry.

But Angela knew better and saw right through his act that he was actually nervous and letting her go first so that he doesn't have to face the teacher. And it was Angela gave a look to Xavier and he gave her a lopsided grin as three of them got inside.

"Ah Ace! Mrs Knights, Mr. Knights," the teacher spoke as soon as they got inside.

The teacher was a middle aged lady, highly qualified and looked cordial to both Xavier and Angela as they smiled at her and back at each other talking in expression language that 'she is not that scary' as they compared to what Brad had told them earlier about parent meetings and Xavier's last teacher who was a lot strict and scarier one.

"Mrs Jones," Xavier said as he walked up to the teacher and forwarded his hand for the teacher for a handshake. She took his hand and then shook hands with Angela as she signalled them to take the seat.

"I must say, Ace up here is the most decent and smart kid I have ever met in my life. In Fact, he is smarter than his age level kids and it is why I have decided to hold up this meeting to talk something important. And I hope being his parents, you both would always wish and want the best

for your kid and I hope you think about it heartily as well as mindfully," the teacher, Mrs Jones said as she clasped her hands and became serious all of a sudden. Involuntarily, Angela clasped her hands with Xavier and Xavier gave her hand a gentle squeeze assuring her that it would be fine as both of them paid attention to Ace's teacher while Ace sat on the couch in the back of the room listening intently to his teacher.

The meeting was a chaos for both Xavier and Angela as Xavier unbuttoned his shirt and Angela removed her suit jacket as both of them took long strides towards their car with Ace following them like a little puppy holding his glasses afraid that it would fall off.

"Dad!" Ace called as he got into the car back seat and watched his tensed mother and father. Xavier unlike the previous time, sat on the driver seat because he knew Angela was not in her right state of mind to be able to drive and he huffed out as he rested his hand on the steering wheels.

"What does she mean sending Ace to a boarding school? He is only eight damn it!" Angela cried as remembered the teacher's words.

It came out Mrs Jones, astonished by Ace's IQ level and problem solving ability, and she kept an IQ test in which he scored full points and as she had already heard Ace solving upper grades problems easily, she wanted Ace to go for the London school where he would get proper study materials and that would help him in the future as he would be competing all the elite students from around the world.

"I know!" Xavier scoffed in response.

Like Angela, even Xavier didn't want to let his son go to a boarding school and he didn't even care the teacher's words and the other elite students. For him, he wanted to be with Ace each and every minute and watch him grow up. He refused to even think about let his son go to a boarding school.

"Why can't you just be like those other normal students or better fail in your exams," he scoffed at himself when he said that second part.

Ace chuckled hearing his father as he rested back on his seat watching both of his parents meddling with their feelings.

Ace was a brilliant student, undoubtedly and was the nicest kid around. According to Brad, Ace had both his parents intelligence and was kind and pure like Angela and had the looks of Xavier. In other terms, Brad had already imagined that he was going to be the dream man of every woman around when he grew up. He wore high powered glasses for his age and always dressed neatly with his hair combed and parted to the side neatly and was a confident kid.

Ace loved his parents dearly and never argued back or demanded or wished for things like other kids of his age did. In fact he was very mature for his age and it was why he was able to catch his

teacher's eye. But somewhere deep down, he wished for the first time, that his parents agree to let him go because he already had a dream and it was to be an astronaut. Since the time he was born, he was very much interested in celestial bodies and things that were outside the world. He wanted to see what it looked like outside of the earth and this dream of his was well aware by both of his parents. But being the sweetest kid, he wasn't going to interfere in his parents work and it was why he chose to sit quietly as both of his parents bickered in the front seat, the whole way back to their house.

Ace was sure that both of his parents would never let him go and even though he was sad, he didn't take it to his heart and chose to deal with the situation as quietly as he could.

It was midnight when Ace couldn't sleep and got up and walked up to his telescope wanting to gaze at the stars when he heard some commotions downstairs and curiosity getting the best out of him, he walked down to find his mom crying with her head in his father's lap as she sobbed continuously.

"Xavier, I can't live without him," Angela sobbed while rubbed his hand on his wife's arm looking distressed as well.

They had finally come to the conclusion that keeping stones on their hearts, they were ready to let Ace go, for his future. They were aware that Ace wanted to go and he had dreams pictured up in his eyes. Failing Ace meant both Xavier and Angela failed as his parents and it was what they were afraid of.

Even though, they have to live apart, finally after fighting, bickering, quarreling and sobbing both of them got to the conclusion that indeed, Ace had to leave for England the next month.

Ace stood on the stairs, teary eyed as he watched his parents helping him to step the stairs of his dreams. He was grateful as well as sad to know that he might have to restrain his parents from seeing him grow up and pamper him. He wanted to stand on his own feet but watching his parents sacrificing their wishes for him made his heart swell up in love and pride, because he had the most amazing parents in the whole world whom he loved and cherished the most.